A World through Words:
Dengbêjî, Kilam and Collective Memory

In order to acquire the doctoral degree in Philosophy at the Faculty of Humanities of the Georg-August-Universität Göttingen

submitted by

Sayid Resul Darati

Göttingen, 2023
Table of Contents

1 INTRODUCTION  
1.1 The Novelty of this Work  
1.2 Aims and Goals  
1.3 Research Questions  
1.4 Methodological Issues  
1.4.1 Participant Observation  
1.4.2 Documentary Analysis  
1.5 Summary of the Contents  

2 CHAPTER I: A Theoretical Framework  
2.1 Memory Studies and the Role of Literacy and Illiteracy  
2.2 Collective Memory and Oral History  
2.2.1 Oral History  
2.3 Kurdish-Kurmanj Society and Oral Culture  
2.4 Oral Poetry and Idioms  

3 CHAPTER II: On Dengbêji  
3.1 Literature Review  
3.2 The Locations of Dengbêji  
3.3 Dengbêji and Other Kurdish Oral/Musical Traditions  
3.3.1 Stranbêji  
3.3.2 Çîrokbêji  
3.3.3 Dengbêji  
3.4 Performance of Kilam  
3.5 The Period of Dengbêji  

4 CHAPTER III: The Agîrî Resistance  
4.1 The Agîrî Resistance as a Case Study  
4.2 A Summary of the Agîrî Resistance  
4.2.1 The Agîrî Resistance as Seen Through the Turkish Official Accounts  
4.2.1.1 Stages of the Turkish Military Operations  
4.2.1.2 The First Military Operation in Ağrı: 16th May-17th July 1926  
4.2.1.3 The Second military operation in Ağrı: 13th-20th September 1927  
4.2.1.4 The Tendürük Military Operation: 14th-27th September 1929  
4.2.1.5 Zeylan Revolt and Counterinsurgency: 20th June-10th July 1930  
4.2.1.6 Oramar Revolt and Counterinsurgency: 16th July-10th October 1930  
4.2.1.7 The Third Military Operation on Ağrı: 7-14th September 1930  
4.2.2 The Agîrî Resistance as Portrayed in the Kurdish Written Accounts  
4.2.2.1 Xoybûn  
4.2.2.2 The Amnesty and Negotiation Process  

8  
10  
11  
11  
11  
12  
12  
14  
15  
19  
20  
23  
27  
31  
31  
49  
52  
53  
54  
55  
59  
64  
71  
71  
75  
79  
81  
83  
84  
85  
86  
89  
91  
93  
101  
104
### 4.2.3 The Agirî Resistance Through the Dengbêjî Narratives

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Kilama</th>
<th>Author</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ferzende Beg</td>
<td>Dengbêj Şakiro</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xalis Beg</td>
<td>Dengbêj Şakiro</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edoyê Ezîzî</td>
<td>Dengbêj Nûroyê Bazîdî</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 4.3 Social-Cultural Background of the Society in the Beginning of 20th Century

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Kilama</th>
<th>Author</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Şerê Ser Xelatê</td>
<td>Dengbêj Şakiro</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şerê Bavê Xalis</td>
<td>Dengbêj Şakiro</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 5 CONCLUSION

### 6 APPENDICES

### 7 BIBLIOGRAPHY
Abstract

Keywords: Agîrî, Collective Memory, Cultural Memory, Dengbêj, Dengbêjî, Illiteracy, Kilam, Kurdish, Kurmanji, Literacy, Narrative, Orality, Oral Culture, Oral History, Rebellion, Resistance.

This dissertation analyzes aspects of the dengbêjî tradition among Kurdish-Kurmanj communities in the context of collective memory. It argues that dengbêjî is a means of preserving a considerable number of narratives in collective memory and conveying history through generations. Therefore, the dengbêjî tradition is examined in the context of memory studies, with a special reference to oral history, oral traditions, and collective memory.

The study begins with a theoretical discussion regarding literacy and illiteracy, as well as the role of literacy in societies. This paves the way for analyzing the connection between illiteracy and oral culture among Kurdish-Kurmanj people. The aim of this discussion is to draw from existing scholarly works to create a theoretical framework for the topic and to analyze the impact of dengbêjî on the collective memory of a society whose literacy level was low until the last few decades.

Dengbêjî is an oral tradition and a method of recounting history among Kurmanji-speaking Kurdish people. By focusing on the connection between memory and history, this dissertation will examine this specific way of remembering, drawing upon memory studies. Consequently, the function and role of dengbêjî in creating a collective memory among Kurmanjs, and the characteristics of this type of oral memory as opposed to written accounts of the past, are analyzed.

The dissertation centers on dengbêjî as a particular oral tradition and distinguishes it from other Kurdish oral and musical traditions, such as çîrokbêjî and stranbêjî (lit.: storytelling and singing). This helps to set the tradition apart. The study also delves into the time and location of dengbêjî by comparing it with some other oral/musical traditions, such as ashîk and naqqâli from Anatolia and Iran. Furthermore, the period of the tradition, the performance of dengbêjs, and the relationship between performers and the audience are also examined.
The collective memory of Kurdish people regarding the Ağrı Resistance, which occurred in eastern Turkey around Mount Ağrı (Turkish: Ağrı, Armenian: Ararat) between 1926 and 1930, serves as a case study here. To gain a deeper understanding of the topic, certain kilams about the fighters in this resistance are examined. Through these narratives, this dissertation seeks to understand how Kurdish-Kurmanj people have remembered the resistance and its fighters, and how these memories differ from written Kurdish and Turkish accounts. This part of the study also provides insight into the society's perception of their past. This perception differs from the way the past is represented in certain written sources and from today's viewpoint.

In this manner, it may pave the way for discussing the role of written documents in the recent history of Kurdish people.

Focusing on a specific oral tradition, this dissertation primarily concerns Kurmanji-speaking Kurdish people who mainly reside in the East and Southeast of Turkey, Northern Syria, and partially in Iran and Iraq (which geographically indicates the central and northern parts of Kurdistan), as well as in some small areas in the Caucasus. The research spans approximately one hundred years, specifically from the 1880s to the 1980s.
Zusammenfassung:


Die Dissertation konzentriert sich auf Dengbêjî als eine besondere mündliche Tradition und grenzt sie von anderen Kurdischen mündlichen und musikalischen Traditionen, wie çîrokbêjî (wörtlich übersetzt: Geschichten erzählen) und stranbêjî (wörtlich übersetzt: singen) ab. Mit


Die Zeitspanne der Forschung umfasst etwa hundert Jahre, nämlich von den 1880ern bis in die 1980er Jahre.
1 INTRODUCTION

1.1 The Novelty of this Work

This work is an attempt to analyze the collective memory of Kurdish-Kurmanj society through dengbêjî, and it aims to discover the overlaps of collective memory and history in a particular time-period. In this case, conveyed via kilam, the collective memory of society regarding the Agirî resistance, which occurred between 1926 and 1930, will be compared with written accounts. In other words, this study thoroughly studies a specific time-period and the role of dengbêjî and kilam in conveying the past into the Kurdish collective memory. When considered from such a perspective, it is obvious that dengbêjî had a much greater impact on Kurdish collective memory than any written historical material, especially for the Kurds whose literacy rate was low and whose native language was banned in Turkey for several decades. ¹

Oral traditions can be significant sources for memory studies. Especially if a society does not have a common written history, oral traditions can be a source for tracing their past. In such cases, the society recalls its past and conveys it to the next generations via oral traditions.

Recollection of the past through oral traditions among Kurdish people is worth examining in detail because Kurmanji-speaking Kurds have created a culture built upon strong oral traditions. Dengbêjî is one of the relevant practices. Kurmanjs have recalled and defined their past and kept their memories for decades through this tradition. Thus, dengbêjî has become a way to store a considerable amount of historical knowledge in the collective memory. Therefore, searching the history and culture of this society requires examining of its oral traditions and particularly the dengbêjî practice. The novelty of this dissertation lies in the analysis of this Kurmanji oral tradition and its products to construct and preserve collective memory which reflects the history of the society. Since this work describe dengbêjî as part of collective memory which conveys history of Kurmanj people, the discussions, and critical findings in the field of memory studies are crucial for examining the connection between individual and collective memory.

¹ Kurdish was banned in Turkey between 1924 and 1991 according to two laws: Şark Islahat Plani (24th September 1924) and Tevhid-i Tedrisat Kanunu (3rd March 1924). Even after March 1991, according to the law 2923, although it is free to use Kurdish in daily life, usage of Kurdish is limited. There are a lot of official and unofficial limits for usage of it.
This study is a deeper and more detailed extension of my MA thesis ‘The Dengbêjî Tradition among Kurdish-Kurmanj Communities: Narrative and Performance During the Late 19th and 20th Centuries’ (MA in History, Boğaziçi University, 2013) in which I analyzed dengbêjî as a particular oral tradition and focused on the kilams -the narratives- as a specific genre.

When writing this dissertation, I had already engaged with the topic from different perspectives; from being familiar with the performances in my childhood to studying it professionally for many years. However, this topic is relatively new and there is not so much detailed research of this tradition and kilam. Dengbêjî has so far been examined as a part of Kurdish culture and folklore. Distinctively, this study does not only analyze dengbêjî as a particular form of oral transmission, but it also focuses on this tradition as a part of Kurdish-Kurmanj collective memory by questioning how this tradition has shaped and contributed to the collective memory of the society.

This research categorizes the narratives as products of a particular genre and analyzes their content to create a frame for the tradition as it was said but mainly, it compares samples of this oral tradition with written Turkish and Kurdish accounts to analyze the differences between collective memory and written accounts. In this sense, the study examines a certain historical period of the society through oral narratives.

The story of this dissertation overlaps with my personal memory on the one hand and the 20th century history of Kurmanji-speaking Kurdish communities in Turkey on the other. The first scene emerging from my memory starts with a group of men gathered and listening to a dengbêj; and it is followed by another one in which the elderly people are listening to kilams through some tape cassettes in the late 1970s and early 1980s.

In my childhood, I did not pay much attention to kilams, as they were complicated for children to understand. After my childhood I started to grasp their contents and became interested in the tradition. Many years later, when I decided to research the topic for my M.A. thesis, I already had extensive personal experience and familiarity with its forms and practices. While researching for my dissertation, I gathered further historical knowledge and theoretical perspectives on the topic. Therefore, this study has derived from both my scientific research and personal observation and experience.

The story of this work overlaps with my personal experience in dengbêjî and its social evolution as well. When I started to gather kilams in the early 1990s dengbêjî was totally ignored by the educated young generation. Some of my friends even suggested that I should
find something else to spend my time on. Interestingly, when I started to write my dissertation, the same tradition had already become a subject of glorification by the young and educated Kurdish people. In this sense, I reject both the neglect and the glorification, which both arise from superficial knowledge. Instead of glorifying or ignoring the tradition and its products, a serious study should try to understand the contents and functions.

In this study, I tried to do it: to understand what the kilams tell about the society, about their perception, and about themselves.

1.2 Aims and Goals

The goal of this dissertation is to analyze the Kurdish-Kurmanj collective memory via dengbêjî and to study it as a specific part of the culture of Kurmanj people whose majority live in Turkey. As a society which does not have a common written history, Kurmanji-speaking Kurdish people have memorized their past, and this history has been conveyed through generations via the dengbêjî tradition until the late 20th Century.

There are no detailed scholarly works about the memory created by dengbêjî, and the existing literature mainly focuses on the life stories of certain dengbêjs or addresses the topic from other disciplines such as social anthropology or musicology. This dissertation approaches the topic from an interdisciplinary perspective and places it within the field of memory studies. Besides creating a frame for the tradition, the dissertation examines some specific historical period, the resistance in Agirî (1926-1930) through the kilams. The narratives regarding this resistance are compared with the evidence of contemporary written sources. The difference between oral and written sources is one of the focus points of the dissertation. Thus, it will be the first study of its kind, aiming to start a discussion for further works about the role of written accounts regarding the near past of Kurmanj people.

The main objectives of this study can be classified under three categories:

a. To analyze dengbêjî as a particular tradition and its narratives as a genre.

b. To study the narratives in the context of collective memory, as a cultural production of Kurmanj people.

c. To investigate a particular period of the history of this community by comparing the evidence of certain narratives with that of written sources.
1.3 Research Questions

- What is dengbêji and how does it function? What is the relationship between dengbêji and the oral culture of Kurmanj people?

- What is the role of dengbêji and kilam within Kurdish-Kurmanj collective memory? How have Kurmanji-speaking Kurdish people remembered their past? How has this memory been transmitted to the next generations? How has dengbêji shaped the collective memory of Kurmanjs and their understanding of their own history and identity?

- How do Kurdish-Kurmanj people remember the events of the Agirî Resistance through dengbêjs and the kilams? What is the difference of these oral narratives from written history?

1.4 Methodological Issues

Besides study of primary and secondary literature for the theoretical part different research methods such as participant observation and documentary analysis will be applied in this study.

The predominant methodology is a qualitative approach to research. Analysis of the narratives recorded on old records (tape-cassettes) is the crucial part of the dissertation for understanding the social, cultural, political, and historical background of the narratives. This study categorizes the narratives as productions of a particular genre rather than analyzing them as separate and specific pieces. Thus, it develops general arguments that reflect the characteristics of a tradition and its genre. Hence, it is an attempt to create a general, in-depth view of the tradition and distinguish it from other Kurdish oral traditions.

1.4.1 Participant Observation

In this study participant observation mainly consists of my attendance at dengbêji performances in the 2000s. Additionally, I have witnessed several dengbêji gatherings during my childhood including both rural and urban life in the Kurmanji culture in the late 1970s and early 1980s. Witnessing those dengbêji gatherings in my early years of life gave me an understanding of its natural form. Based on this experience I was able to distinguish between older and newer forms of the tradition, which was important to understand the characteristics
and the period of dengbêjî.

This experience also enabled me to observe the differences in the tradition as it re-shaped after the 2000s, a development that is called “the new dengbêjî” by other scholars.

1.4.2 Documentary Analysis

The primary documents that were analyzed for this study are tape-cassettes which were mainly recorded between the 1960s and 1980s by the audiences of dengbêjî performances. The records used in this study are taken from private collections or internet sources.

All the kilams mentioned and transcribed in the dissertation have been transcribed from tapes and translated into English. Instead of using existing transcriptions I preferred to make my own, because sometimes even misinterpretation of one word changes the meaning of a whole sentence.

As they form a key part in the development of collective memory, examining the kilams as a part of history is the cornerstone of this study. Contrary to the existing studies, in this work oral narratives are not a complementary source. They are the main objects of research seeking to analyze the concepts and narratives that characterize Kurmanj oral history in comparison with written accounts.

To choose a certain kilam to use in the study, I listened to different versions from different dengbêjs. Then, I transcribed the ones completed in lyrics. The sound quality and audibility were also important factors in the transcription process. In some kilams I used several performances of one single dengbêj to capture the lost or inaudible sentences. After that I translated them into English.

1.5 Summary of the Contents

Chapter I begins the study with a survey of different theories and approaches regarding the literacy-illiteracy topic in dissimilar studies. After a discussion with reference to previous scholarly works on the topic, dengbêjî and oral culture are studied in the context of collective memory to create a theoretical framework for the dissertation. Then, the tradition of dengbêjî and the genre of kilam are examined in the context of language, performance, location, and content.
The theoretical framework in this chapter is followed by an analysis of the oral culture among Kurdish-Kurmanj society in the context of illiteracy and rural life. Therefore, this thesis argues that as an oral tradition, dengêjî is a way of shaping and preserving memory for Kurmanj people, who were mainly illiterate until a few decades ago. In this sense, it reflects the common values and history of these communities that are living in Turkey and Syria, partially in Iran and Iraq, and some small areas in Caucasia.2

Kurmanji has varieties of oral traditions but the characteristic reflection of Kurmanji culture is more crucial in dengêjî. Dengêjî is essentially a Kurmanji oral tradition which springs from Kurmanji culture. The relationship between this tradition and Kurmanji culture is also analyzed in this study.

The second chapter is an overview of dengêjî which starts with a literature review. The chapter distinguishes dengêjî from other Kurdish oral traditions by its content, performance, and characteristics. It also examines dengêjî in comparison to some neighboring traditions in Anatolia and Iran. Additionally, in the second chapter, the interaction between dengêjs and their audiences as well as the recording techniques of their performances are reviewed. After focusing on dengêjs as specific performers and their way of performing, the chapter concludes with a discussion of the period of the flowering of dengêjî, roughly between the late 19th and late 20th centuries.

The third chapter evaluates oral and written accounts about the Agîrî Resistance against the Turkish government as a case study. This resistance occurred between 1926 and 1930 in the border region between Turkey and Iran. Both the theoretical perspectives from the first chapter and the conclusions of the second chapter are applied here.

The chapter starts with a summary of the resistance and continues with the Turkish official military reports and written Kurdish accounts regarding this resistance. Then, these written accounts are compared with the contents of certain kilams which reflect the collective memory of Kurmanj people. In this context, the highlight of the chapter is the juxtaposition of the evidence of Kurdish society’s collective memory and the written accounts about the resistance. This chapter shows how the collective memory of Kurdish-Kurmanj people regarding the period of Agîrî Resistance differs from written accounts.

2 Tens of thousands of Kurds have immigrated from Transcaucasia—voluntarily or forcibly—to the Central Asian countries such as Kazakhstan, Kyrgyzstan, Turkmenistan, and Tajikistan, and to Siberia between the 17th and the 20th Centuries. These people are also Kurmanj. See; https://worldview.stratfor.com/article/will-kurds-kazakhstan-kyrgyzstan-turkmenistan-and-tajikistan-seek-joining-greater-kurdistan (Accessed on 05.03.2021)
CHAPTER I: A Theoretical Framework

The first chapter of the dissertation starts with a discussion regarding literacy/illiteracy and examines the role of literacy in societies through the perspectives of two opposed points of view supported by different scholars. This discussion is relevant to the study of oral culture given the low literacy level among Kurdish people at the time.

Then, the chapter will continue with an examination of dengbêjî from different perspectives such as oral history, oral culture, and collective memory. Therefore, the discussion opens a multidisciplinary way to investigate the narratives of the dengbêjî tradition as a way of collective memory among Kurmanji speaking Kurdish people. The chapter proceeds to understand the meaning of oral expression among Kurds and its relationship with the Kurmanji culture.

The study claims that the dengbêjî tradition relates to the Kurmanji dialect of Kurdish and the social-cultural background of Kurmanji people. To have a closer look, the role and importance of oral expression among Kurmanji people is analyzed in the context of their rural life.

Most of Kurmanji people achieved literacy in the last quarter of 20th Century in Turkey. Otherwise, they have mostly recollected their past. This history has been transmitted via oral narratives over generations. In this sense, examining oral culture among Kurdish-Kurmanji people and examining their collective memory via dengbêjî is the cornerstone of this chapter.

It may be said that on the one hand, common illiteracy is a disadvantage for a culture, whilst it creates a strong oral culture on the other. Since Kurmanji people could not develop a written language in Turkey during the whole 20th Century, they were able to preserve and

---

3 According to the sources of https://ourworldindata.org/literacy the rate of literacy in Turkey was 62% in 1975. Since the main condition of literacy was speaking in Turkish, and most of the Kurds could not speak in Turkish, this rate was much lesser among Kurdish people. Moreover, most of ordinary Kurds did not know that it is possible to write in Kurdish until the early 1990s. Ahmed Aras conveys his experience in the 1960s when he was making research about Kurdish folklore in the villages of Agîrî, Mûş and Erzirom. The peasants were asking "is it possible to write in Kurdish?" when I was saying I am going to write about Kurdish culture, he says. See; interview with Ahmed Aras, Dönîya TV, Rû Bi Rû, by Nevzat Keskîn, 6th December 2013. Personally, I have a similar experience. I was 8-9 ages old when I saw writing in Kurdish for the first time in my life. In the early 1980s, a cousin of my grandfather, who was a mûlîh taught at the madrasah, was our guest. He asked me to read some transcript in the Arabic letters. I tried to read it in Arabic, but it did not work. Then, he started to read it as: Vê fîrqê ez ji te kîrîm / feryad ji destê fîrqêtê ye” (this separation took me from you / the cry stems from the separation). It was a religious hymn written with the Arabic alphabet in Kurmanji. It was extremely surprising for me to see that something is written in Kurmanji. So far, I did not know that one can write and read in Kurdish-Kurmanji.

4 See the footnote number 1 regarding the laws to ban the Kurdish language in the summary of this study.
develop an oral culture, where a strong collective memory was shaped. Thus, dengbêjî and kilam, as a particular tradition and genre have become the main elements of this collective memory.

2.1 Memory Studies and the Role of Literacy and Illiteracy

The cases of literacy and illiteracy have become topics of scholarly studies mostly after the 1960s. Initially, these studies were undertaken from two divergent viewpoints; the first group of these studies approached these two issues as a dichotomy. At this time, many scholars assumed that literacy was the key element of cognitive, educational, even economic, and political development. This approach, which is advocated by scholars such as Marshall McLuhan (1962), Elizabeth Einstein (1979), Lawrence Stone (1979), Jack Goody (1968), Ian Watt (1968), and Carlo Cipallo (1969) was criticized by the second generation of researchers in this field such as Michael Cole (1981), Ruth Finnegan (1988), James Paul Gee (1990) and, Harvey J. Graff (1995). The main criticism by later scholars of the previous studies was that of a) falling into technological determinism b) approaching the issue based on dichotomies, such as literacy-illiteracy, oral-written etc., and ignoring interconnections between the processes.

Cole and Scribner argue that writing and its role in societies have been misinterpreted, and they are seen as a threshold between history and prehistory and between modern and traditional societies. Graff furtherly argues that the cognitive impact of literacy is a myth rather than a reality. Literacy never had as much effect as it is imagined. Moreover, hegemony, which always accompanied literacy, was mostly misinterpreted. Namely, status, power, ability etc., which arise from hegemony were mistakenly interpreted.


6 “In earliest times, literacy was highly restricted and a relatively unimportant craft; it carried little of the association with wealth, power, status, and knowledge that it later acquired” [...] “Despite having a shorter history – roughly 2,600 years – ‘Western literacy and –430 years– printing technology have led to an exaggeration of the role of writing and literacy’ [...] “Contrary to popular and scholarly wisdom, major steps forward in trade, commerce and even industry took place in some periods and places with remarkably low levels of literacy; conversely, higher levels of literacy have not proven to be stimulants for ‘modern’ economic development.” Graff, Harvey J., *The Legacies of Literacy: Continuities and Contradictions in Western Culture and Society*, Indiana University Press, Bloomington and Indianapolis, 1987, pp. 5, 8,10.
as the effects of literacy itself. Thus, literacy was given a more importance than it deserves.\(^7\)
Furthermore, it had been thought that literacy by itself was able to change not only cognition but also economic, political, social, and cultural status.\(^8\)

As was said earlier, another approach that is criticized by the second group of scholars is addressing the topic of literacy and illiteracy as a dichotomy. This attitude which is described as “the tyranny of dichotomies” by Graff\(^9\) leads to an exaggeration of the role of literacy and totally separates the phenomena of literacy and illiteracy from each other by creating absolute borders between them.\(^10\)

The view of literacy as a starting point for development and changing comprehension is also criticized by Ruth Finnegan. Her criticisms of this approach can be summarized in three points: 1. generalization of the role of literacy and illiteracy in different cultures is misleading; 2. this approach is a kind of technological determinism; 3. literacy and illiteracy are interconnected; they are not exactly different levels of stairs.\(^11\)

---


\(^8\) “Literacy, I have come to believe, is profoundly misunderstood. That is one ‘natural’ consequence of long-standing tyranny of the ‘literacy myth’” […] “Literacy is sometimes conceived as a skill but more often as symbolic or representative of attitudes and mentalities”[…] “in other levels, literacy ‘thresholds’ are seen as requirements for economic development, ‘take-offs’, ‘modernization’, political development and stability, standards of living, fertility control, and on and on.” […] “Social scientists during the past three decades have argued that the development of the underdeveloped areas must (or, normatively, should) recapitulate that of the West and sometimes have attempted to put that vision into practice. This is the moving spirit of the major works by such scholars as McLuhan, Elizabeth Einstein, Lawrence Stone, Jack Goody and Ian Watt, and Carlo Cipallo.” Graff, Harvey J., *The Labyrinths of Literacy, Reflections on Literacy Past and Present*, The University of Pittsburgh Press, Pittsburgh, 1995, pp. 5,10,14,19.


\(^10\) “It seems highly rational to investigate orality and literacy from the concept of two opposing types: the one, the characteristic setting for oral tradition, typified as small-scale and face to face, rural and non-industrial, communal and conformist rather than individualist, and dominated by ascribed kinship, religion and revered traditions; the other – the local for written transmission - typically industrial, urban and bureaucratic, characterized by a respect for rationality, individual achievement and impersonal norms, heterogeneous and secular.” Finnegan, Ruth, *Literacy and Orality, Studies in the Technology of Communication*, Basil Blackwell Ltd, Oxford, 1988, p.140.

The role of secularism also plays a role in critiques of the "dichotomy". Graff highlights the role of religion and church in the process of increasing literacy, which is usually ignored by some earlier scholars.12

The assumption that increasing literacy is a part of the Enlightenment is usually taken to mean that spreading literacy is also connected with secularism. However, not only in medieval Europe but also in many other parts of the world, religion has become the leading institution of literacy.13 For example, in Europe, the aim of the church – especially the Protestant Church - was to reach more people, to be understood, and of course, to lead to salvation. Therefore, common literacy was one of the most effective ways to reach people for the church, but the church never aimed to spread secularism among people.14

Differently from the scholars listed above, Ong takes a further step in the case of literacy and illiteracy by arguing that it is not easy for literate people to understand illiterate people because their mindsets are different.15 According to Ong, most intellectuals, being part of the literate world, have seen orality16 as a primitive form of communication. Furthermore,

12 “Finally, we note that the only other areas that so fully and quickly achieved near-universal levels of literacy before the end of the eighteenth century were places of intensely pious religion, usually but not always Protestant: Scotland, New England, Huguenot French centers, and places within Germany and Switzerland.” Graff, Harvey J., The Labyrinths of Literacy, Reflections on Literacy Past and Present, The University of Pittsburgh Press, Pittsburgh, 1995, p. 22.

13 As it is known, Kurdish language was officially banned in Turkey between 1924 and 1991. During this long period of time the unique institution which had Kurdish as a language of education was also a religious one: madrasah. Students were educated both in Arabic and Kurdish in the madrasah and, of course, the madrasah was not a legal entity. Nonetheless, it used to lead a kind of enlightenment because the students—şagırt—were studying not only religion but also chemistry, astronomy etc., therefore, madrasah used to contribute to development of both Kurdish language and some scientific disciplines in a small portion of Kurdish people in that period.

14 Of course, the policy implemented by the Church had some unwanted results as well. As an example, we may remember Domenico Scandella, a peasant from the book, “The Cheese and the Worms” by Carlo Ginzburg, and the results of written documents given by the Catholic Church to change the pagan beliefs of peasants. In the 16th Century, by distributing religious booklets to the peasants the assumption of the Church was to change the Pagan beliefs of the peasants around the Friuli region of Italy. However, the result was totally controversial: at least some of the peasants were interpreting the given texts in a different way because they had their own beliefs and experiences. As a result, some people were creating different secular theories against the Church. Nevertheless, these kinds of examples do not mean that the Church was aiming to spread secularism among people. See; Ginzburg, Carlo, The Cheese and the Worms, The Cosmos of a Sixteen-Century Miller, Johns Hopkins University Press, Baltimore, 1980.

15 “Language study in all but recent decades have focused on written texts rather than on orality for a readily assignable reason: the relationship of study itself to writing.” [...] “Writing, […] is a particularly pre-emptive and imperialist activity that tends to assimilate other things to itself even without the aid of etymologies.” Ong, Walter J. Orality and Literacy-The Technologizing of the Word, Routledge- Taylor & Francis Group, edited by Terence Hawkes, London, 1982, pp.11,12.

16 In this study, “orality” is used as thought and verbal expression of societies which are not familiar with literacy (especially with writing and printing technology) and as it is described as “primary orality” by Ong. See:
language studies were also based on writing. Therefore, they were far from understanding illiterate world.17

Ong then emphasizes the ideological reasons for the scholarly focus on texts. Researchers either did not consider oral culture worth examining or did not have any idea of how to include oral culture in their research. Since oral accounts are unstable, their categorization is not as easy as that of written ones. Moreover, there is an inverse proportion between literacy and rhetoric: As the literacy rate increases and reading from text becomes hegemonic within mindsets, memory, and rhetoric regresses. Especially, after the invention of printing technology, literacy became more common, and this gradually changed mindsets. In this way, the mindsets, and ways of thinking of literate and illiterate people are not the same. Furthermore, as a part of the literate world it is not easy for scholars to understand the mindset of illiterate people, according to Ong.18

From my point of view, whereas literacy and illiteracy are regarded as complete opposites by the first approach, as the second group of scholars clearly show literacy is not a kind of threshold or barrier between literate and illiterate people; nor does the ability of reading lead to a change in people’s perception. Moreover, although the literate world has a kind of hegemony based on writing, it is not reasonable to think that literacy changes mindsets fundamentally. Furthermore, being literate does not necessarily mean having a further ability to comprehend. Perception, moreover, does not need to be directly linked with literacy.

Of course, literacy may enable one to acquire knowledge, but this does not arise directly from the ability to read. Instead, it arises from what is read and what is learned from it. In other words, reading may lead to further knowledge derived from what is read, not directly from the ability itself. It looks as though this confusion is the main shortcoming of the first approach to the literacy-illiteracy issue.

---


Moreover, the case of literacy/illiteracy can be more complicated in some specific issues. For example, if a community has been forced to become literate in a foreign language the result can be very different from what was anticipated.

For instance, among elderly Kurdish people some men can read but they can’t write. They were forced to become literate in Turkish, usually during their time of compulsory military service in the Turkish Army. Their reading ability is limited to recognizing the letters and understanding short sentences. However, they are not literate in the common sense of the term because: a) their reading ability is very limited, and it is in Turkish whilst their mother tongue is Kurdish. They may be unable to speak Turkish at all or their Turkish is too limited; b) They are not literate in their mother tongue -Kurdish- too. In other words, their reading ability is limited to reading short sentences in an alien language. However, it is the skill of reading.\footnote{The reading and writing ability of some elderly Kurdish people in Turkey is a dilemma. Since Kurds are forced to become literate only in Turkish, which is not their mother tongue, especially elderly people have a kind of disability in this case: many of them can’t write while they are able to read. To be forced to learn reading and writing in a language which is not known well leads a kind of disability. To make it well understood we can compare it with someone who tries to learn writing and reading in Arabic with Arabic letters while she/he does not speak Arabic. Plus, we should add that this person is not literate even in his/her own mother tongue. Thus, the problem is getting worse: they are forced to read and write with an unknown alphabet in a language that they are not able to speak while they are also not able to read and write in their own mother tongue! And the result is having a limited ability of reading while totally being far from writing. This is a different kind of literacy/illiteracy situation which should be considered in the Kurdish example.} In such circumstances, it is impossible to separate literacy from illiteracy because they are not truly binary opposites.

2.2 Collective Memory and Oral History

In this work, the term collective memory is used within the meaning of Halbwachs, who describes how aside from having an individual memory, each person shares a group memory which deals with past events, and is memorized by the community through narratives, songs, rituals etc.\footnote{Halbwachs, Maurice, \textit{On Collective Memory}, The University of Chicago Press, Chicago, 1992, p. 38.} However, Halbwachs distinguishes memory and history from each other, and this approach has been criticized by Erll as being “[…] one of less felicitous legacies of Halbwachs”.\footnote{Erll, Astrid, \textit{Cultural Memory Studies: An International and Interdisciplinary Handbook}, de Gruyter, Berlin/New York, 2008, pp. 3.6.} Jan Assmann also objects to Halbwachs’ assumption that the concepts of
memory and history exclude each other because memory is transformed into history at a certain level.  

Like the connection between individual and collective memory, history and memory are also connected to each other as Erll remarks:

“I would suggest dissolving the useless opposition of history vs. memory in favor of a notion of different modes of remembering in culture. This approach proceeds from the basic insight that the past is not given but must instead continually be re-constructed and re-presented. Thus, our memories (individual and collective) of past events can vary to a great degree. This holds true not only for what is remembered (facts, data), but also for how it is remembered, that is, for the quality and meaning the past assumes.”

2.2.1 Oral History

Since this study focuses on an oral tradition and describing it as a part of collective memory, before examining collective memory, we may first analyze oral history to determine the similarities and differences between the two.

In the framework of Memory Studies, oral history is a useful method to go beyond written history. Oral history was faced with a kind of suspicion in the academic world for a long time. Although some systematic oral history research projects started in the United States in the 1930s; and then in Europe in the 1960s, oral history was excluded from the academic field of history until the 1990s.

Written history is mainly based on objective facts, such as archaeological evidence and written documents. On the other hand, oral history relies almost entirely on subjective human accounts, and circulates through the transmission of oral information. It is mainly based on the subjective evidence of eyewitnesses and is also known as the history of daily life.

Nonetheless, history and oral history are not conflicting approaches, as Neyzi notes:

“It is important not to view the fields of oral history and history as incompatible or even opposed: they are similar in many ways and different. Oral history relies on history in going about its work. Oral history is also a major means of studying recent history. On the other hand, unlike history, oral history is also about, and studies, the

22 Assmann, Jan, the opening event of the IEA Conference “Spaces of Remembrance”, São Paulo, 15th May 2013.

present. An oral history approach can also complicate the way we understand history, particularly at the subjective level, and how it should be studied.”

Since oral history is related to memory studies it seems appropriate to connect dengbêjî to both memory studies and oral history studies. However, we should keep in mind that dengbêjî is an oral tradition, and unlike oral history “[…] oral traditions are no longer contemporary. They have passed from mouth to mouth, for a period beyond the lifetime of the informants.”

Therefore, oral traditions can be a source for history. Furthermore, by exemplifying the history of the kingdom of Benin prior to 1880, and the rivalry among the Hadiya leaders in Ethiopia, Vansina shows how in some situations oral traditions can be the only source for history.

Oral history studies usually consist of life stories, reminiscences, hearsay, and eyewitnesses. In this kind of study, the main point is the subject, namely, the source. The subject - the narrator - is dominant in every stage of the interviews. They can tell the story as they want. The same person can tell different versions of the same event in different situations. Especially in the case of witnesses, each person can give a different description while talking about the same event because each of them may have a different approach to the event. That is why memory studies, especially while analyzing life stories, are based on analyzing subjectivity as Portelli explains it via autobiographies:

“Autobiographical discourse, whether the narrator takes the initiative of writing, or merely responds to an interviewer’s question, is always about the construction and expression of one’s own subjectivity. To ignore and exorcise subjectivity, as if it were


26 Vansina, J., Oral Tradition as History, The University of Wisconsin Press, Madison, 1985, p. 188.

27 As an example: “The famous story of the reminiscences of Rossini about his only meeting with Beethoven may serve as a warning to the unwary. When he first told it, a few years after Beethoven’s death, Rossini said that he went to Beethoven’s house, had great difficulty in being admitted, and in the end did not speak to the master whose command of Italian (Rossini’s language) was insufficient. This last bit we may doubt –at least from this source-. Towards the end of Rossini’s life, the story had become quite a tale. It involved the tortured master, in the throes of creation, receiving Rossini, advising him to continue his great work, and above all praising Il Barbiere di Siviglia as the greatest comic work ever written”. Vansina, J. Oral Tradition as History, Madison, Wisconsin, 1985, p. 9.
only a noxious interference in the pure data is ultimately to distort and falsify the nature of the data themselves.”

Keeping in mind that "memory is a matter of how minds work together in society" and it is "structured by social arrangements" the narratives of dengbêjs, the kilams, can be considered as a form of oral history but they are not direct products of individual memories. Since kilams are produced through collective memory, developing the narrative is not mainly in the hands of the narrator. In this sense, dengbêjî narratives are far from the issue of “intersubjectivity” as Alistair Thomson points out:

“In one sense we compose or construct our memories. From the moment we experience an event we use the meanings of our culture to make sense of it. Over time we remember our experiences as those public meanings change. […] In another sense we ‘compose’ memories which help us to feel relatively comfortable with our lives.”

In contrast to life stories, dengbêjî narratives are like "historical songs", a categorization coined by Vladimir Propp in terms of their subject matter. Propp claims that historical songs are basically created by witnesses taking part in the events and cannot be evaluated as entirely personal products although they are created by some talented individuals.

Vansina also emphasizes the collective authorship in genres which are not memorized word by word. In this context, I prefer to describe dengbêjî narratives, i.e kilam, as a production of collective memory although they have been created by some -mostly anonymous- individuals, because their continued transmission is informed and determined by the collective memory of Kurmanj people. Of course, some of the dengbêjs are also composers in the sense that they

---


29 Olick, Jeffrey K. and Joyce Robbins; *Social Memory Studies From Collective Memory to the Historical Sociology of Mnemonic Practices*, Annual Review of Sociology, Number: 24 (1), pp.105-40.


31 Propp, Vladimir, *Theory and History of Folklore*, University of Minnesota Press, Minneapolis, 1925, pp.149-163.


33 The creation of kilam has usually been a controversial issue among foremost dengbêjs. Sometimes 2-3 different dengbêjs have claimed to be the creator of the same narrative. However, it looks that even some kilams have been created by certain talented dengbêjs the majority of kilams have always been as anonymous narratives.
have produced some narratives about past events, but this does not change the anonymous character of the genre.

In dengbêjî, the narratives are not produced through individual memory of the dengbêj. A dengbêj is normally a medium of the narratives which are usually known by his audience. Thus, he is not able to change the meaning or storyline of the narrative. Obviously, as a performer, he may change the sequence in some cases, spice the narrative as he can, but the main body of the narrative is not changed. These narratives are not written but they are memorized by both the performer and audience. That is why these texts are more stable than most expressions of individual memory, and why they are more attractive to the audience. In this case, the audience is not so much interested in the individual memory of the dengbêj but interested in his narrative which is based on the collective memory of the society. Guha recaps a similar case in India: An Indian storyteller comes to a village and starts to talk about his journey in unknown lands, but the audiences do not care about what he says. However, when he starts to relate an old story which is already known by the audience - unlike the speech about unknown lands - they listen to him carefully. “You cannot imagine a scene as Indian as this one” Guha says to describe the situation.34 Similarly, Vansina expresses the same point by referring to H. Scheub about his study of The Xhosa Ntsoni (1975): the audiences “[...] must already know the tale so that they can enjoy the rendering of various episodes, appreciate the innovations, and anticipate the thrills still to come. So, every performance is new, but every performance presupposes something old; the tale itself.”35

Similarly, when a dengbêj attends to a civat (community), the audiences generally do not expect to hear some news from him, even he also gives news, but rather they wish to hear the known narratives.

2.3 Kurdish-Kurmanj Society and Oral Culture

Kurmanji is the major dialect of Kurdish, which is spoken among Kurmanjs who mainly live in Turkey, Syria, and partially in Iran and Iraq. There are also Kurmanji-speaking people in the Caucasus. Others have immigrated to central Asian countries such as Kyrgyzstan, Kazakhstan, Turkmenistan, and Tajikistan between 17th and 20th Century as was mentioned

in the summary of this study. Furthermore, the main body of Kurdish Diaspora -except perhaps in the US and Canada- consists of Kurmanji people. Although there is no reliable census, it can be assumed that at least 50% of the whole Kurdish population consists of Kurmanji-speakers. However, Kurmanji is not only a dialect but also a way of identification which exists in different contexts. Therefore, it deserves to have a closer look on them.

There are different identifications of Kurmanjs based on their social status. For example, the Kurdish elites, who were aware of their ethnicity at least since the 16th century, did not identify themselves as Kurmanjs. On the other hand, “[…] in different parts of Kurdistan they (Kurdish peasants) were called guran, miskên, klawsû and kurmanj, which were used as class rather than ethnic labels.” Moreover, until recently, Kurdish elites (sheikhs, mîrs, aghas, etc.) looked down upon the Kurmanj, i.e., the lower classes, peasants. For example, calling these people kîrmâç (lit. 'penis-kisser') was common among Kurdish Sheikhs of Norşîn in Bedlis (Turk: Bitlis). They were considering themselves as being sheikh and sayyid while the others were Kurmanj (kîrmâç). Hence, they distinguished themselves from lower class Kurdish people by demeaning them.

In fact, as I personally witnessed, until the1990s, Kurmanji-speaking people who did not belong to an eşîr (tribe) usually identified themselves as Kurmanj but not as Kurds. Since a common national imagination had not yet come into being, the concept of Kurmanj represented the identity of non-tribal Kurds in Turkey. In contrast, others identified themselves through their tribal-familial connections, and through belonging to an eşîr, but not as Kurmanj. Belonging to an eşîr also implied nobility, which distinguished the eşîr from the

---


37 However, we should note that this approach has diminished since 1990s, during which the Kurdish peasants and lower classes became the main bearers of the Kurdish struggle in Turkey. Today, nobody dares to describe Kurmanjs openly in such a way.

38 For example, until 1990, identification as being Kurmanj was also a way for distinction from Zazakî/Dimîlki speakers, and it was same vice versa around Diyarbekir. Since there was not a strong identity of eşîr or any other nobility origins in this region, and since a Kurdish ethnic identity was not strong, being Kurmanj was meaning not being Zaza; and being Zaza was meaning not being Kurmanj. However, since Kurmanjs were much of the society, while all of Zazas were able to speak Kurmanji, Kurmanjs were rarely able to speak in Zazakî/Dimîlki.

39 Eşîr means tribe. However, Kurdish tribal structure has specific features. “It is difficult to classify Kurdish tribalism since it has always been far from homogeneous and has always been revolutionary. At the risk of crude generalization, one might say that traditionally the Kurds were largely organized into a rough hierarchy of sub-tribes, tribes, and tribal confederations. Loyalties were not immutable, and a strong and determined leader of one tribe might well be able to acquire a sufficient following and perhaps territory to throw off previous loyalties and realign himself with another federation or group, or even with the government.” See: McDowall, David, "The
non-tribal Kurmanjs. Then, especially in the 1990s, “…the term ‘kurmanj’, which initially referred to the subjected peasants in northern Kurdistan, became synonymous with ‘Kurd’…”[41] in Kurmanji speaking areas.

Another source argues that Kurmanjs are people who have been released from hierarchical structure of tribes. In this sense, Kurmanjs live outside the tribal sphere with their own familial structure and this process has increased after the 19th century. The first Kurdish communities in the suburbs were Kurmanj people.[42]

Since Kurdish was banned in Turkey for a long time, even though it has officially been allowed since 1991,[43] the use of Kurdish faces many obstacles. Hence, writing in Kurdish has not developed among Kurds in Turkey, whose overall majority are Kurmanj. Especially since the ban of the madrasah, where the language of education[44] was Kurmanji written in the Arabic alphabet, there has not been a single institution that teaches or uses Kurdish until the past two decades.

Thus, the relationship of illiterate Kurmanj people with education including literacy, became solely one of fear. Script was always had connotations of piety or threats, both of which were based on fear. For Kurds in Turkey, this fear comes from two sources: The

---

40 Similarly, Kurdish people who are not belong to noble tribes -namely eşîr- are called as Kurmanj among Kurds in Iran. Kurmanj has an offensive connotation around Urmiah while it means non-tribal, namely, unnoble around Bradust and Sumay areas. Only non-tribal Kurds around Salmas call themselves as Kurmanj. Source: Khalili, Mostafa; based on his research in Urmiah county, Iran. (Information received through personal emails in March 2020 and January 2021)


42 “The Kurmanjs are Kurdish communities that have moved away from tribal affiliations. The decline of the tribal system has led to an increase in the number of Kurmanj communities. The Kurmanjs were the first groups to settle in the suburbs, and this trend has continued to accelerate since the 19th century. This process can be likened to the emergence of proletarians during the early stages of capitalism. See; Öcalan, Abdullah, Bir Halkı Savunmak, Amara Yay., Istanbul, 2004, p. 234.

43 Kurdish was banned since 1920's but after the military coup of 1980 in Turkey, the government decelerated another law against Kurdish to be used in official agencies on 19th October 1983. These new additions were cancelled in March 1991 (law no. 2932) by the government of Turgut Özal (1927-1993). However, Kurdish never has been totally free in Turkey although some positive changes made on the constitution between 2002 and 2007.

44 See, for education at Madrasah: “After completing his education and mastering the so-called ‘twelve sciences’ (Arabic grammar; logic, Hadith; rhetoric; law; Shafi’ite jurisprudence; theology; argumentation; Persian and Arabic literature; history and geography; and mathematics, astronomy, and the natural sciences) the student would request from his teacher an authorization to issue legal opinions (fatwâs) and to practice independent judgment (ejtehâd).” http://www.iranicaonline.org/articles/education-vi-the-madrasa-in-sumni-kurdistan (Accessed 13rd March 202).
Religion (Islam) and Government. If the script was in Arabic, it would trigger the fear of God while official papers in Latin script had minded them of their fear of the government.

As I remember, Kurdish elderly people were afraid of writing. If the script was in Arabic, it would arise from fear of God. For example, if some papers with Arabic script were thrown out or fell on the floor, our elderly people would immediately take it from the floor, touch it to their head—as a commendation—and put it in a hole in the wall to prevent it getting dirty or being damaged. Since it was written in Arabic, they were herfên Qur’anê (the letters of Qur’an) even if it was only a package of cigarette paper smuggled from Syria!

Receiving a written document was another source of fear for them. When they received an official letter, they were seriously worried. For ordinary peasants, receiving a letter from the government was not a good sign because their relationship with the government used to be troublesome. As a result, receiving a written paper meant having another issue with the government. They had to find someone who was able to read it. They could then calm down if there was no problem, but usually such letters spelled trouble.

Therefore, especially between the 1920s and 1980s, Kurdish, and specifically the Kurmanji dialect has developed mainly as an oral dialect in Turkey. After the 1920s a small portion of Kurds attended schools however, since schooling was strictly based on Turkish, schooling and assimilation into Turkish culture were usually synonymous.\(^45\) Thus, “[…] Kurmanji survived as an oral dialect among mainly illiterate Kurdish people.”\(^46\)

On the other hand, the fact that a large portion of the Kurdish-Kurmanji community was illiterate protected the use of Kurmanji, as Kreyenbroek points out:

“The isolation of many Kurdish communities and, ironically, the low level of education may also have helped to save Kurmanji (and, incidentally, Zaza) in the difficult period of 1938-61.”\(^47\)

---

\(^{45}\) While Kurmanji was suffering from oppression in Turkey and developing as an oral language, in the Southern Kurdistan the Sorani dialect was developing as a written language. Firstly, under the British Mandate, and later, during the early years of General Qassem, the Kurds had the opportunity to develop a written language. Furthermore, after the Gulf War (1991), and the collapse of the Baath Regime (2003), the Kurds in Iraq have had a large degree of autonomy. Thus, Kurdish has become an official language of the Kurdish Regional Government, and many publications in Kurdish -mainly in Sorani dialect- have been published.


2.4 Oral Poetry and Idioms

Kurmanji culture has many specific words and idioms. Kilams make full use of such idioms, and people who are not familiar with rural life of the Kurmanj people and their oral culture cannot comprehend them.

Rural communities have their own measures and criteria. For example, if someone is going to or coming from a far distance and if you cannot recognize his face nor hear his voice, you may know him from his walking style or via riding his horse. This situation is described as, for example, çûyin çûyina Gêjo ye (the riding is the riding of Gêjo) in the kilam named Dêran. Moreover, recognizing people from far away by their clothes was also common. Since people did not have many clothes and rarely changed them, they were easily recognized from a distance by what they wore.

Pêjn is a very specific example which can be given in the context of Kurmanji and rural life. This word simply can be described as feeling something’s movement or existence. In the case of pêjn, you do not hear or see someone/something, but you are just feeling that it is moving or existing somewhere close by. It can be compared to (er)ahnen (German, lit. 'suspect, intuition') but it is more specific than it. You may ahnen everything which includes some future events or feelings. However, pêjn presupposes existence of a physical body. This means, you feel somebody’s movement or existence without hearing, seeing, touching, smelling, and tasting it physically. Having a good sense of pêjn is essential in rural life to avoid threats.

Another example from Kurmanji in rural life could be dinya (the world). In Kurmanji dinya kerr e literally means the world is deaf. However, it means that there is a total silence around, e.g., while it is snowing. To describe this situation with the deafness of the world instead of describing it with the deafness of weather or landscape is interesting. In rural life, in the context of Kurmanji, outer atmosphere is the world by itself. You can feel the world, it is there, close by you, and living there! When you say dinya sar e it means the weather is

---

48 Interestingly, recently a Chinese IT company announced that they are working on some special software which is based on “gait features”. It looks like the knowledge of rural life derived from thousands of years has been transferred into IT. The software is described as “Gait recognition is to identify humans based on their gait features. Compared with other biometrics such as face, iris, palm and fingerprint, gait features are still obtainable and recognizable at a distance with a low-resolution video. Therefore, with characteristics of non-contact, long distance (50 meters), cross-view (360°) recognition range and hard to disguise, gait recognition fills the market gap of long-distance identification in public security industry” on their website. See; http://www.watrix.ai/en/gait-recognition/ (Accessed on 27th February 2019)

49 In the performance of Dengbêj Şakiro. This kilam is available on internet.
cold. However, *dinya* is not only the atmosphere, again, it is a living entity close by you, and it is getting cold, hot, wet, etc.

We can also look at the expression for calling out. In Kurdish oral poetry, like many other Middle Eastern cultures, triple pronouncements are also felt to be more valid. In the crucial moments, people call or are called three times. This creates certainty and wipes out any suspect or doubt. In many kilams, before or in between a clash, the rivals call out each other three times and challenge, curse, or remind something to each other. Since the action is repeated three times, no one can deny that it is heard by the others. This triple pronouncement is also used for looking or describing to strength assertion. However, the expression is mainly used for calling out. In contrast, in urban life nobody needs to repeat something three times to assure that it is heard by all sides.

As the last example, while memorizing their past, Kurmanj people do not specify the time of the past event but specify the place. This is connected to the time-measurement of rural life on the one hand, and the priority of the place over the exact time on the other. In kilams, time is usually left vague, using such expressions as *di zemanekî da* (Eng. once upon a time).\(^{50}\)

To understand this specific expression, we must go back to the rural life of Kurdish people. Again, unlike modern history, Kurdish collective memory does not refer some exact date or calendar. Instead, it describes place and gives just some clues about the time. There are some formulas or idioms to describe the date, which is usually vague while it gets clear by following the event and the people who are mentioned in the narrative. *Di zemanekî da* is the most common form of referring to the past in the Kurdish oral compositions. The time is vague in this form because, a) the setting is far removed from urban culture, b) it refers to a different concept of time which is called as “ecological time” by Vansina.\(^{51}\)

Firstly, as it was stated above, Kurmanji oral traditions in general, and the dengbêjî tradition particularly is based on rural life. Thus, the exact timing of urban life is not used. Since agriculture and cattle breeding are the most important elements of life, season is paramount time-measurement in rural life. Everything is planned and done according to the

---

\(^{50}\)Although English translation of *di zemanekî da* is “once upon a time”, in the dengbêjî context it does not give the same meaning. Unlike the storytelling in English, once upon a time does not indicate an imaginary world, time, or place. It means a real but vague time.

season. Therefore, ordinary people describe past events according to their season, not their
days\textsuperscript{52} or even months.

Secondly, setting time according to an exact calendar and schedule is related to officiality
which was not a part of the Kurdish peasants’ life. Since Kurds had no strong ties with
officialdom, they did not use official calendars. Furthermore, the traditional Kurdish calendar
was different from official Turkish one which originates in the Gregorian calendar and is
based on the sun. On the other hand, Kurdish people used to have a Qamarî calendar, i.e.,
based on the moon. Thus, even if they tried to account days according to the calendar they
would fail, or they would have to shift between the calendars. This situation is expressed as 
\textit{bi hesabê me /bi hesabê hikumatê} (according to our calculation / according to the calculation
of the government) in Kurdish.\textsuperscript{53} Namely, they must account it twice in two different calendars.

So, conveying the past events in indefinite references to time is the common usage in
both the Kurdish collective memory and its oral expression. Thus, when a narrative starts with
\textit{di zemanekî da} (once upon a time) the audiences take care of the sequence of the narrative,
but not the time. They are neither interested in the exact date of the event nor they can
calculate it with the measures of the modern times. Nonetheless, this vagueness as to the time
does not mean that all the narratives are timeless, or they are simply tales. By contrast,
especially when we talk about the dengbêjî tradition and kilam, we can find the exact time of
some past events in compare of official documents. For example, \textit{kilama şerê Emê Gozê û
Bişarê Çeto} starts with [...] \textit{di zemanekî da} (once upon a time) and continues as \textit{Emê Gozê
hebû û Bişarê Çeto hebû. Bişar rabû jinek revand û tê dernexist û rabû xwe avêt Brehîm
Pasha [...]}.\textsuperscript{54} (There were Emê Gozê and Bişarê Çeto. Bişar kidnapped a woman, but he
failed. Then, he took refuge to Brehîm Pasha.) Then, in the sequence of the kilam, other
characters appear, the place gets clear, and the time of the fight is becoming better

\textsuperscript{52} A day is divided to some necessary parts which mainly consist of daytime. In Kurmanji this division usually consists of \textit{šivaq} (dawn), \textit{sibeh} (morning), \textit{dâna} (after morning), \textit{navroj} (noon), \textit{asr} (mid-afternoon), \textit{rojava} (sunset), \textit{êvar} (evening), \textit{sev} (night). During the day, everything is done within these time-periods. Merely, some
important elements of urban life such as hour and minute are not needed in rural life. Among these periods’
names \textit{šivaq}, \textit{sibeh} and \textit{asr} are originated from Arabic. Like the division of the day, the meals have also been
divided and identified. For example: \textit{xwurînî} (early or before breakfast); \textit{taştê} (breakfast); \textit{navroj} (lunch); \textit{şiń}
(dinner); \textit{paşîv} (after dinner).

\textsuperscript{53} In the Kurdish/Kurmanj collective memory, the word of \textit{hikumat} (government) refers to the Turkish
government/state, and it absolutely has an exclusive/negative connotation. They never have considered the
\textit{hikumat} as their own government, and they have always put some distance from it. Yet, this is not simply to
distance themselves from an occupier nor it arises from a national identity. It is probably connected to the status
of a non-state group towards to an external state. Even pro-government Kurds do not consider the Turkish
government as their own government; it is still \textit{the government} in their verbal expression.

\textsuperscript{54} Dengbêj Fadilê Kufragî, \textit{Kilama Şerê Emê Gozê û Bişarê Çeto}. This kilam is taken from my collection.
understood. If we want to find the exact time of the clash mentioned in the kilam we may compare it with some other narratives and official documents since the people mentioned in this kilam are not fictional, they are real people.

Kilams are considered as history by Kurmanj people because they are mainly about real people and events. As we will see in the third chapter, it is not difficult to trace the events and people described in kilams via certain comparisons with official documents and some other accounts.

Following this first chapter, the second chapter will start with a literature review of existing studies. Then, it will analyze dengbêjî as a particular oral tradition by focusing on its performance, location, and era. The tradition will also be compared to other oral-musical traditions known in the region.
3 CHAPTER II: On Dengbêjî

The second chapter begins with a literature review of works on dengbêjî. Following the literature review, the chapter offers a map indicating the dengbêjî common areas. The main characteristics of dengbêjî regions are analyzed in this section.

By defining dengbêjî as a particular Kurdish-Kurmanji oral tradition and a part of collective memory, the chapter aims to distinguish kilam as a genre from other Kurmanji musical-narrative genres. The chapter seeks to outline differences between dengbêjî and other Kurmanji oral-musical traditions such as çîrokbêjî and stranbêjî (lit.: storytelling and singing). Given the ongoing confusion in the literature between stranbêjî and dengbêjî it is necessary to distinguish between these genres.

Dengbêjî is also compared with some neighboring traditions such as that of the Ashik in Anatolia, and Naqqâli in Iran. This comparison seeks to illustrate the fight for survival of oral traditions in the age of technology, and to examine dengbêjî from that perspective.

The performance of kilams, the relationship between performer (dengbêj) and audience, the main features of traditional performances in rural areas, and the role of dengbêjî in conveying history are also examined in this chapter.

The chapter concludes with a discussion regarding the period when the oral tradition flourished. Leaving out the little attested earlier period, it defines the main period of dengbêjî from the 1880s to the 1980s.

3.1 Literature Review

The existing literature on dengbêjî typically consists of descriptive accounts of regional collections of kilam and stran, and sometimes even çîrok, which all comprise the same repertoire. This literature also classifies dengbêjî based on its location or the characteristic events of performances, such as weddings or diwankhane\(^{55}\) gatherings, where each genre, including kilam, is treated as a frozen cultural form.

In contrast, this study distinguishes kilam from other oral genres, categorizes it as a specific genre, and tries to situate it within its historical context. Essentially, kilam is different from stran and çîrok particularly in its content and historical focus. While çîrok is fiction with

\(^{55}\) Diwanxane was a gathering room provided by local Kurdish rulers in old times. Each agha, beg, and mir had his own diwanxane. Diwanxane was open only to male notables and guests.
fantastic elements; stran is mainly expression of emotional states such as sorrow, happiness, love, joy or descriptions from daily life and nature. Distinguishingly, kilam texts are mainly surviving narratives of experienced past events. In this sense, it is a kind of factual tradition and “factual traditions or accounts are transmitted differently -with more regard to faithful reproduction of content- from fictional narratives such as tales, preverbs, or sayings”.

This study argues that as a part of Kurdish-Kurmanj collective memory kilam has three important components which mark them: (a) They usually tell of a historical event, which can be (1) a riot, (2) a family/tribal conflict, or (3) a love story. (b) They are also an outcome of a purely oral tradition, functioning as an oral conveyance of the knowledge of past, and (c) they are kept in memory through performances, during which they are continuously reproduced and reshaped.

A brief review shows that dengêjî has so far been studied as a part of Kurdish folklore rather than as a specific oral tradition. Yet, contrary to common belief, dengêjî is practiced only among Kurdish-Kurmanj communities but, not all Kurdish people. Therefore, the development of other traditions as well as genres and subgenres of Kurdish cultural performances in the region should be examined separately from dengêjî and its narratives.

Until 2000, despite a few exceptions, the literature on dengêjî generally consists of a non-scholarly approach that was politically motivated. The dominant approach was to define dengêjî as a Kurdish national tradition. A part of this literature approached dengêjî from a very nationalistic perspective, and although the content of most of the dengêjî narratives does not fit with the idea of nationalism, some have gone one step further and define it as a “national reaction”.

Moreover, a location-based categorization was developed where dengêjî is classified based on the place where it is performed but not on the inherent characteristics of the tradition itself. Hence, instead of studying kilam as a particular genre, it has been confused with other Kurdish oral/musical genres and introduced simply as Kurdish folklore.

Before getting into a detailed analysis of these classifications, one should acknowledge that there has been no consensus concerning dengêjî in the literature to date. Confusion and disagreements prevail on how to single out dengêjî from other Kurdish oral/musical

---

56 Vansina, J., *Oral Tradition as History*, The University of Wisconsin Press, Madison, 1985, p.113

57 As an example, for these exceptions, see; Alan, Remezan, “Kürt Halk Şarkıları İçin Küçük Bir Poetika”, *Kovara War*, Number 2, 1997, pp.11-34.

58 For some examples, see; Aras, Ahmet; Şairê Kurda yê Efsanevî: Evdalê Zeynikê, Weşanên Deng, Istanbul, 1996
traditions. It is also stated by Riegle that “[…] some people use the term dengbêj loosely to describe any music that they feel has a sonic characteristic of traditional singing[...]”.

Questions here center upon how to name the narrative performed by dengbêjs. While some refer to this narrative as kilam, others may know it as stran.

Generally, people who conduct studies on this subject, defining and classifying dengbêjs and their performances, usually base them on function instead of characteristics of the genre. Whereas dengbêj may perform stran, it does not mean that stran is a product of the dengbêjî tradition. Also, the place where dengbêj performs his kilam does not affect the structure and content of kilam as a genre.

Moreover, it should be noted that diverse names of these genres in different regions also feeds this confusion.

Instead of analyzing dengbêjî based on its function or the place where it is performed, my approach is to define it as a particular oral tradition, while defining its narratives as a particular genre. Thus, I will distinguish it from other Kurdish musical-narrative genres by highlighting its structure, content, and used language.

Thus far, dengbêjî has been distinguished by the context in which it is performed by people. For instance, dengbêjî as a narrative tradition is usually not performed at dilan (wedding) or other activities for entertainment. That form of activity is called stran and it is performed by a stranbêj while dengbêjs usually perform at a diwankhane or community space. Certainly, some dengbêjs are also stranbêjs and perform strans at weddings and some other occasions for entertainment. Nevertheless, their status in such cases should not be defined as dengbêj but, instead as stranbêj. Admittedly, this difference may not be recognized by the audience, which may refer to the dengbêj either as dengbêj or stranbêj. Nonetheless, traditionally, if a dengbêj performs at a wedding, the audience expects a stran instead of the dengbêj’s usual genre, the kilam. In Kurdish, in such circumstances as a wedding, this is directly described as dengbêj distrib (dengbêj is singing). In fact, as a specific tradition in dengbêjî, the dengbêj does not sing but tell the kilam. If a dengbêj sings it means he is performing stran, not kilam. Namely, having some dengbêjs performing stran besides kilam-leads such confusion.


60 For further information about this topic see, next two pages, the etymological roots of the words of stran and kilam.

61 I had classified kilam as a particular genre in my MA thesis in 2013. In this study, this classification will be done in further details.
Occasionally, dengbêjs perform their kilams at weddings but this is only for special sessions which differ from the general atmosphere of the wedding. For example, no one is dancing while the dengbêj tells his kilam, but dancing during performance of stran is typical.

Having dengbêjî performances at weddings as a special event was not common in earlier times. It started to appear parallel to the changes in dengbêjî within the last twenty years and further fueled the confusion between dengbêjî and stranbêjî, and kilam and stran. Essentially, dengbêjs such as Reso or Şakiro did not perform strans. These kinds of dengbêjs refused to perform strans because this was regarded as being beneath their dignity. Dengbêjî was considered as the grander art. Hence, the foremost dengbêjs tried to distinguish themselves from stranbêjs. Nonetheless, people like Karapetê Xaço and Huseynê Farî chose to be both dengbêjs and stranbêjs.

The categorization of musical/narrative genres in Kurdish has been a problematic issue for scholars who have conducted field research in the region. For instance, Ethnomusicologist Dieter Christensen, accurately classifies kilam as “sung narratives” but added qeside to this category as well. However, qeside and kilam are mutually exclusive, as the qeside is an Islamic musical genre and performed by a qesidebêj. The tradition is called qesidebêjî. Therefore, religious principles forbid such artists to perform kilam or stran; the qesidebêj is only allowed to perform qeside, which can be classified as religious chant. Hence, a dengbêj must forget his dengbêjî and perform only qeside if he has committed himself to religious practices. These two genres also differ from one another in terms of their performance styles. While kilam is told without musical instruments, the qeside performance is accompanied by erbane, a tambourine-like instrument. In terms of musicality, the melodic structure of qeside could be classified somewhere between stran and kilam but does not fit completely into either category.

From an etymological perspective, the words stran and a kilam have different roots. While stran is related to the Kurdish verb strîn (Eng.; singing), kilam comes from the Arabic root kalama/KLM (كلم) meaning ‘to speak’.

Probable reasons behind the confusion between stran and kilam are the blurred boundaries that distinguish them, which were not well-defined in earlier periods. Still another

---

62 Christensen, Dieter, “Music in Kurdish Identity Formations”, Presentation on the “Conference on Music in the World of Islam”, Assilah, 8-13 August 2007. Here, we should note that he was making research in a region which dengbêjî is not common, namely in Hekarî (Hakkari). Thus, he has focused on the other musical traditions but not dengbêjî.

63 Qeside is a Kurdish-Islamic oral genre of Hymns which is common among Sunni-Muslim Kurds and, Qesidebêjî/Qesidevanî is the name of the tradition.
reason is that, because of regional differences, sometimes the same genre is referred to by diverse names while different genres are referred to by the same name. For example, in the Shingal (Sinjar region in Iraq) kilam is called stran despite being borrowed from dengbêjs. Simply put, the confusion of these terms stems from historical and regional differences.

On the other hand, çîrok comes from the root çîr which has associations of lying and of the surreal in Kurmanji, and it is completely different from a kilam and a stran. Çîrok is non-melodic, and it can be described as tale since it is equivalent to a European fairytale. Some dengbêjs were also çîrokbêj. Additionally, some long kilams include non-melodic narrative parts. These two factors contributed to the confusion between identification of kilam and çîrok.

Until the last 15-20 years written sources elaborating on dengbêjî in detail were quite few. Most of the existing written accounts touch upon dengbêjî superficially within the context of Kurdish culture or folklore. A limited number of sources which do refer to the dengbêjî as a main topic including articles, a few books, theses, and dissertations, were written after the 2000s.

The early years of the Republican era, the period of nation-building in Turkey, had no tolerance for languages or cultures other than Turkish. After the Ottoman Empire broke up, to build a Turkish nation-state, all languages other than Turkish were banned. For the Kurdish communities, this was a period of resistance against the oppressive state policies. Aside from the earliest rebellion, the Qoçgîrî (Koçgiri, in Turkish) riot in 1921, a series of resistances occurred between 1925 and 1938 beginning with the Sheikh Said (Kurd., Şêx Seîd) uprising (1925). After the Sheikh Said rebellion, the Kurdish people faced immense oppression by the Turkish government which sought to prevent their language from being spoken. Therefore, Kurdish literature declined because of bans and intolerance towards the Kurdish language by the Turkish government. In this period, even writing about Kurds posed a severe problem. Although dengbêjî survived in the Kurdish region, it was not possible to publish written works about this tradition. The new Turkish republic was built on Turkish ethnic identity and no other identities were acknowledged. Pro-Turkish nationalist rhetoric

---

64 For further explanation look at the section of “The Map of Dengbêjî”.

65 Upon two specific laws: Şark Islahat Planı, 24th September 1924; Tevhid-i Tedrisat Kanunu, 3rd March, 1924

66 Qoçgîrî Kurdish Revolt occurred near Sivas and Erzincan in March-June 1921.

67 Sheikh Said Rebellion occurred around Muş, Bingöl, Elazığ, and Diyarbakır in February-March 1925.

68 Dersîm Resistance which consists of a series of clashes during the military operation of the Turkish Army occurred in Dersim in 1937-1938.
was so extreme that research was published claiming that Turks are the “seminal nation of the world from which all others emerged.” With their identity denied, the Kurdish people were rebranded as “mountain Turks” who had forgotten their origins. In addition to banning Kurdish language in public, the Turkish republic changed the names of thousands of places and oppressed all Kurdish political or cultural activities.

While the state’s approach to Kurdish culture was very severe in Turkey, in Syria, which was still under the French mandate, a more liberal attitude prevailed. Books, magazines, and journals about Kurds were published. However, with some exceptions, these publications were predominately political. Since dengbêjî was considered as non-political it did not take so much attention from these publications.

During this period a significant number of Kurds emigrated from Turkey to Syria. While they were familiar with dengbêjî, it is hard to find a written source discussing this subject as a specific topic. The main reason for this is, probably they did not find dengbêjî so valuable to write about it. Perhaps, they thought the tradition is too archaic. Therefore, even when they wrote about Kurdish culture, they did not give a big space to the tradition. They separated the concepts of culture and politics from each other, and the main topic of their interest was politics.

Moreover, even in the last decades, although the Kurdish political movement was strong in Syria as dengbêjî was not considered to be political, it was not attractive to the Kurdish political activists.

To have an overview of written sources in this period, two specific magazines published in Kurdish in Syria and Lebanon will be analyzed in this section. They are entitled Hawar and Roja Nû.

---

69 Mustafa Kemal, the founder of Turkish Republic, was the leading figure of these attempts in his last years. Upon his directives some international conferences were organized to prove their Turkic-Centered theories. Türk Tarih Kongresi which was held in Ankara in July 1932 was the foremost attempt to prove the origin of the world -from China to Rome- as being Turks.

70 The life story of dengbêj Baqî Xido (1920-2009) is a good example of this issue. He was the foremost dengbêj of Ruha including Rojava (Northern Syria) but his whole life passed in poverty. Although the Kurdish political movement was strong in Rojava, and even Baqî Xido had created some political kilam such as Kilama Rêberê Kurdan Evdila Ocelan he was still considered as a traditional, even archaic figure by the political actors until his death in 2009.

71 Source for the Hawar and Roja Nû magazines: www.arsivakurd.org (Accessed on 20th April 2022). I examined all published issues of these two magazines through this archive.
Hawar magazine was issued 57 times between 1932 and 1943 in Damascus by Celadet Elî Bedirxan.\textsuperscript{72} It was the first Kurdish magazine published in the Latin alphabet with Kurmanji. Hawar contained writings both in the Latin and Arabic alphabets until the 23\textsuperscript{rd} issue but, later switched to solely the Latin alphabet. Each issue consisted of a few pages in French and English besides Kurmanji. In general, folkloric, and cultural topics garnered more space from the 1\textsuperscript{st} to the 23\textsuperscript{rd} issues of the magazine, then, it decreased in the following issues.

The focus of Hawar was mainly political, however, it was also interested in Kurdish culture. Thus, some Kurdish tales were published in the magazine inconsecutively. Likewise, the Story of Memê Alan in the 7\textsuperscript{th} issue of Hawar was published in French. This narrative may have originated from the two visiting dengbêjs named Xido and Mişo\textsuperscript{73} from Kobanê. Other small pieces were featured about Memê Alan in Kurdish which originated from the same dengbêjs. However, dengbêjî was not a specific topic on the table of Hawar.\textsuperscript{74}

Similarly, another Kurdish magazine, *Roja Nû*, was published weekly between 1943-1946 by Kamuran Elî Bedirxan\textsuperscript{75} in Beirut. During these three years the magazine was issued 73 times.

*Roja Nû* combined different topics related to the Kurdish issue which extended beyond politics and culture into fashion. The aim of the magazine was to open a door for Kurds to connect them with the rest of the world. However, with the literacy rate being exceptionally low and the fact that the magazine was published in Lebanon, the magazine’s reach extended to very few people.

The magazine was published in Kurmanji and French and consisted of four pages in total. Furthermore, the 49, 51, 53, 56, 58, 60, 62, 65 and 73rd issues were only in French. It looks as if, since the magazine was not having readers among Kurds, the publishers were trying to reach the outer world by using French.

Dengbêjî and kilam were not a specific interest of this magazine either. In some issues we see that they published kilams mixed with stran, *qewl*,\textsuperscript{76} and çîrok as part of Kurdish folklore.

\textsuperscript{72} Celadet Eli Bedirxan was one of the founders of Xoybûn, a Kurdish political organization in exile. After leaving his political activities, Celadet Bedirxan focused on Kurdish language and culture. For further information about Celadet Bedirxan and Xoybûn look at the third chapter of this study.

\textsuperscript{73} Misho Bekebûr and Xidir Hendawî, *Hawar*, Kovara Kurdî, Sal 1, No 7, 25th Aug. 1932, p. 5. (Xidir Hendawî is the father of dengbêj Baqi Xido who was mentioned above.)

\textsuperscript{74} Furthermore, most of the issues -especially after the 23\textsuperscript{rd} issue- of Hawar even contained some religious topics titled as *Tefsîra Qur’anê* and *Hedîsên Cenabê Pêxember*, or some grammatical articles titled as *Gramera Kurdmancî* but not dengbêjî. On the other hand, some Kurdish-Kurmanji tales (çîrok) were published on these issues as well. Introductions of foreign countries and poems were also found in Hawar.

\textsuperscript{75} The brother of Celadet Eli Bedirxan. He was born in Istanbul in 1895 and died in Paris in 1978.
Most of the published kilams are only excerpts from the main text, which indicates that they were just written down as they were heard, without any further study.

The kilams published in Roja Nû are usually dated before the Republican era, and they are either about tribal-familial conflicts or love stories.

Kilams are given the title Strana Kurdî in the magazine. Despite a few exceptions, all of them are pieces from different kilams without any context. Additionally, some were taken from Thomas Bois (1900-1975) but not directly from dengbêjs or Kurdish society. Kilama Qenc Xelîl, which is called as Heftsedê in the magazine is one example of these kilams.

Among the kilams found in Roja Nû, which are mostly incomplete, the only clear and relatively complete ones are Fermana Mala Brehîm Pasha, Bedewcana Huseyn Agha, and Delalê Qerejdaxê. These were based on the performances of Ebdilhâdî Mihëme, a dengbêj from Rojava, in Syrian-Kurdistan.

Şêxê Ebdilqadir, Ezîzê Merzika and Sebrîyê Serhedî are other source people for kilams but their works are not as good as those from Ebdilhâdî Mihëme. The kilams taken from them are either uncompleted or written down wrong. Nonetheless, they are longer than dozens of other unconnected small pieces of different products such as Edlê Rabe, Kezîzer, Bîskê Wer, Gulê Gulê and Law Osman which were taken from Ehmedê Fermanê Kîkî. Finally, despite not being kilam, but stran, these are called kilam by the magazine. In fact, from the title to the content there is a confusion as to the use of the terms kilam and stran.

---

76 Qewl is a kind of sacred Hymns of Yezidi community. These Hymns are traditionally performed by professional reciters. See; Kreyenbroek, G. Philip and Omarkhalî, Khanna, Yezidi Spirits? On the question of Yezidi beliefs: A review article, Kurdish Studies Magazine, October 2016, Volume: 4, No: 2, pp. 197-207.

77 Thomas Bois’s book titled La Vie Sociale Des Kurdes was published in 1962; and the other book titled as Les Kurdes was published in 1958. It looks that Bois had shared some of his collection with the magazine in 1946.

78 Barbara Sträuli has listed him as Muhammedê Hadî in her book but on Roja Nû magazine his name is Ebdilhâdî Mihëme. See; Sträuli, Barbara; “Our Steppe is Vast...”, Kurdish epics and tribal stories from Urfa, 1906, Collected by Oskar Mann, Edited. Translated and introduced by Barbara Sträuli, Wiesbaden Verlag, Wiesbaden, 2021. p. 33.

79 To give an example from mistranscription we can look to the “Kilama (H)emê Gozê” taken from Ezîzê Merzika. In the kilam, Emê Gozê says “… bi sonda qesemê…” (to swear in God faith) which has been transcribed as “… bi sonda mehkemê…” (to swear at the court) on the magazine.

80 Ehmedê Fermanê Kîkî is one of the three dengbêjs who have been mentioned in the book written by Mehmed Uzun and titled as "Rojek Ji Rojên Evdalê Zeyniêkê". However, as far as known he was not a dengbêj but a stranbêj. His contribution to the Hawar Magazine also consists of solely stran but not kilam. Ehmedê Fermanê Kîkî was born as a member of Kîkan tribe in Mêrdîn and lived there until passing to the French-Controlling area in Syria.
The situation in Iraq was like that of Syria. Baghdad Radio transmitted broadcasts in Kurdish in 1939.\textsuperscript{81} Despite political pressure from the British mandate regime, Kurds were not subjected to the same policies of denial and assimilation as were instituted in Turkey. However, there too, dengêjî was not an object of research. Iraqi Kurds were not familiar with the dengêjî tradition since it was not common among them. Moreover, most of the Iraqi Kurds speak the Soranî dialect, making the traditions of dengêjî even less accessible to them. The popular oral and musical genres of the Iraqi Kurds are stranbêjî, goranîbêjî and heyranîbêjî.\textsuperscript{82}

Regarding dengêjî, the only region in which scholarly works were produced during this period was the former Soviet Union, especially Armenia. Dengêjî survived strongly within the dense Kurdish-Kurmanji population there, as a cultural-sociological extension of the Serhed\textsuperscript{83} region. Additionally, Yerevan Radio started to broadcast dengêjî performances in 1955 in Armenia. Since the Soviet regime did not oppose Kurdish cultural representations, it was also possible to produce written literature about dengêjî. Thus, some folklore studies were conducted. For example, the Kurdish researchers Hecîyê Cindî and Emînê Evdal in Armenia State University authored a book called \textit{Folklora Kurmancan} (The Folklore of Kurmanjs) which includes different genres of Kurdish folklore was published by the Armenian Government Council Publication in 1936.\textsuperscript{84}

Written in Kurdish, and using the Cyrillic alphabet, the book included different versions of well-known epics among Kurds, such as \textit{Sîyabend û Xecê, Kela Dimdimê} and \textit{Dewrêşê Evdî}.

The relatively free artistic policy of the Soviet Union enabled cultural production among Kurds living in Caucasia within this period. After the broadcast of Radio Yerevan, this situation affected Kurds living in Turkey, Iran, Iraq, and Syria as well.\textsuperscript{85} Although the quality


\textsuperscript{82} \textit{Stranbêjî} is a Kurdish musical genre, and it is common among all Kurds. It will be studied in detail in this chapter. \textit{Goranîbêjî} is also a kind of Kurdish musical genre, and it is common among Iraqi and Iranian Kurds. \textit{Heyranîbêjî} is another Kurdish musical genre which is common among Iraqi Kurds.

\textsuperscript{83} For the location of dengêjî, see; the title of “The Locations of Dengêjî” in this chapter.

\textsuperscript{84} Cindî, Hecîyê - Evdal, Emînê; \textit{Folklora Kurmancan}, Avesta Yayinevi, İstanbul, 2008 (This version of the book prepared by Tosinê Reşîd in Latin alphabet and re-published)

\textsuperscript{85} Radio Yerevan was known as \textit{Radyoya Xaço} among Kurds in Turkey referring the \textit{Cross} of Christianity since it was broadcasting from Armenia. Xaç means cross in Kurdish. Most of dengêjîs who have been interviewed by Hamelink, Çelik and other scholars have admitted that they have heard kilams through Radio Yerevan.
of the books was not academically advanced, the studies by the Kurdish researchers living in Soviet lands are incredibly significant as they are the first and rare written products of the era. However, since these works were written in the Cyrillic alphabet, they remained unknown to other Kurdish communities until 2000s when they were transliterated into Kurdish in Latin alphabet, and were made available to Kurds, especially those living in Turkey.

The corpus of publications which appeared after the 1970s coincided with the Kurdish national struggle. In these accounts, dengbêjî was not directly elaborated on, but mentioned within the context of Kurdish culture. On the other hand, the works produced in this period about the dengbêjî tended to adopt a political approach rather than a cultural one. Especially in Turkey, the way in which dengbêjî was portrayed was a direct reflection of current politics. The rising Kurdish movement under the leadership of Partîya Karkerên Kurdistan (PKK)\(^6\) approached dengbêjî negatively or neutrally until the 2000s.\(^7\) The reason for this could be that this dominant Kurdish movement adopted a distant and generally negative attitude towards to traditions and approached them from a socialist perspective for a long period of time. Accordingly, it categorized dengbêjî, as archaic, feudal, and tribal, even as a retrograde tradition because it was assumed that dengbêjî and kilams trigger feelings of tribalism.\(^8\) And, since the movement was aiming to unify different Kurdish groups against Turkish occupation tribalism was a danger for the national struggle.

Especially after the 1980 military coup, the mainstream Kurdish movement's negative or neutral approach to dengbêjî contributed to the decline of this tradition which was already vanishing because of social-economic and technological changes, in addition to the ongoing oppression of Kurds. In this period, we see a severe difference between the audiences of dengbêjî and the basis of the mainstream Kurdish political movement. Young people, who mostly constituted to the Kurdish movement, were not attracted by the dengbêjî tradition. For the young population with aspirations toward the future and not the past, a cultural-generational gap was created as regards dengbêjî. The audiences of dengbêjî were mostly elderly Kurds who were usually distant to the Kurdish movement.

---

\(^{6}\) Partîya Karkerên Kurdistan (Kurdistan Workers' Party) was founded under the leadership of Abdullah Öcalan in 1978 in Licê-Diyarbekir (Kurd. Amed), and it started a guerilla war against Turkish government in 1984. This fight is still going on in Turkey, and Iraqi Kurdistan.


By the late 1990s the neutral and negative attitudes formerly adopted by the mainstream Kurdish movement toward dengêjî began to shift. Regaining its popularity, dengêjî started to be embraced by the younger generations. Previously, Med TV,89 then Roj TV,90 which had already began broadcasting in line with the mainstream Kurdish movement, while the PKK, began promoting dengêjs. Furthermore, by the early 2000s, the political demands of the Kurdish movement (PKK) in Turkey changed and -at least in the discourse- cultural-democratic rights became the foremost request. This shifting political attitude which softened political oppression in Turkey for a decade led an increase in Kurdish cultural production such as literature and performance arts. Interest in dengêjî, which had been previously neglected, began to flourish. The number and quality of books and articles dedicated to the dengêjî began to increase steadily.

In addition, some other steps were taken to contribute to dengêjî to keep the tradition alive, for example, establishing Mala Dengêjan91 (House of Dengêjs) in various cities, such as Diyarbekir and Wan (Van) by the local Kurdish authorities.92

Moreover, via the internet, especially broadcasting channels such as YouTube, people became more aware of traditional arts in different regions. Dengêjî started to be known among all Kurdish people in and out of Turkey.

This period was the beginning of an era where dengêjî was examined as an independent field of interest, with a remarkable number of articles and interviews published in various magazines, journals, and web pages. For example, the detailed book named Filîtê Quto, written by Salihê Kevirbirî in Kurdish, was published in this period. In the book twenty dengêjî narratives from the Xerzan region are presented along with the stories which these

89 The Kurdish International satellite TV which was broadcasting from Belgium between 1995-1999.
90 The Kurdish International satellite TV which was broadcasting from Denmark between 2004-2012.
91 “Mala Dengêjan” started as an EU supported project of the Diyarbakir Metropolitan Municipality to encourage the local dengêjs to perform their arts in public in 2007, then, it continued with the support of the municipality. It is in Mêrgahmed (Turk: Melikahmet) in the oldest part of the city. This example was followed by the local authorities of Batman and Van. These three municipalities were run buy the elected Kurdish mayors in that time.
92 Scalbert-Yucel studies the role of these Dengêjs’ Houses in detail and she puts forward the argument that the contemporary dengêjî is elaborated as a “nation-building concept” by the Kurdish political movement. Therefore, the article which she investigates the dengêjs’ houses in this context was written in this period. Although I argue that the Kurdish political movement was not the leading figure of re-vitalization of dengêjî but simply supported this process, this article analyses the role of dengêjî houses well in the 2000s. See; Scalbert-Yücel, Clémence, The Invention of a Tradition: Diyarbakır’s Dengêjî Project, European Journal of Turkish Studies, 10 | 2009.
kilams reflected. The author also shows the social problems among the families and tribes to help understand the context of the kilams.

A detailed collection of kilam was published by Ordixane Jalil in 2003 in Kurdish and Russian based on his field research between 1958 and 1990. The book which is named “Historical Songs of the Kurds” contains 231 kilams and their translation in Russian. The author has categorized these 231 kilams under 17 titles.

Another important book of this period was published as a collective work of Ordîxan Celîl and Celîlê Celîl. Their book which they prepared together and published in 2014 is named “Zargotina Kurdi” and published in Kurdish in two volumes. The book includes 37 kilams, strans and epics all together.

In the last few years, a broader anthology of dengbêjî and kilam is prepared and published by Ömer Güneş and Ibrahim Şimşek. The authors gathered kilams performed by three deceased dengbêjs (Dengbêj Reso, Dengbêj Şakiro, Dengbêj Huseyno), transcripted, and published them in Kurdish in three volumes in 2018 and 2021.

We also see that in this period dengbêjî starts to become the subject matter of several doctoral theses after 2010.

The PhD dissertation of Metin Yüksel, “Dengbêj, Mullah, Intelligentsia: The Survival and Revival of the Kurdish-Kurmanji Language in the Middle East, 1925-1960” (in English, 2012), notably analyses the role of the traditions in protecting the language. In his dissertation, Yüksel shows the role played by dengbêjî against the Turkish assimilation policy towards Kurdish people in Turkey. He claims that alongside the Kurdish intelligentsia and mullahs, dengbêjs played a crucial role in the protection of Kurdish-Kurmanji language during the 20th century in Turkey. Although, in contrast to the intelligentsia, neither mullahs, nor dengbêjs had an agenda to protect the language, still, using the Kurdish-Kurmanji language in the traditional form resulted in a kind of protection of the language. In his study,

---

Yüksel prefers to analyze dengbêjî under the title of oral poetry. In this sense, dengbêjî is a part of oral poetry which contributed to survival of Kurmanji.  

The PhD dissertation of Wendelmoet Hamelink, “The Sung Home/Narrative, Morality, and the Kurdish Nation” (in English, 2014), focuses on dengbêjî within the frame of Kurdish studies and cultural anthropology. Dengbêjî is the focus of this study through the life stories of some dengbêjs, and it is defined as “the art of imagination that transports one to another dimension”. In the study, Hamelink assigns a central role to dengbêjî in the Kurdish cultural production before 1980. Then, while analyzing the silence of dengbêjs after the military coup of 1980 in Turkey, she states three main reasons to explain the silence:

“ [...] the dramatic change of structure of Kurdish society; increasing violence and oppression; and the rise of support for the PKK combined with the newly developing Kurdish music scene that was generally very politicized.”

However, despite offering three main reasons Hamelink emphasizes the role of Turkish oppression as the crucial reason for the demise of dengbêjî. She describes the period between 1980 and 2000 as “two decades of extreme suppression.”

Besides offering good analysis of the role of nationalism, self-orientalism, and life stories of some dengbêjs the dissertation has a weakness in analyzing the fall of dengbêjî. In the dissertation the main reason of the silence of dengbêjs after 1980 is explained with political oppression through the life stories of certain dengbêjs. However, I would argue that dengbêjî and qesîdebêjî suffered less oppression because these two traditions were considered as traditional and non-political by the Turkish authorities. In this sense, these two traditions were not specifically targeted by the Turkish government. Therefore, explaining the silence of dengbêjs between 1980 and 2000 because of specific and targeted political oppression is not

98 Yüksel, Metin, Dengbêj, Mullah, Intelligentsia: The Survival and Revival of the Kurdish-Kurmanji Language in the Middle East, 1925-1960, PhD dissertation, University of Chicago, 2011, p: 132. For further classifications, see some examples in the following pages of this chapter.


101 Ahmed Aras reminded me on his interview with Şakiro in 1991. In this interview which Aras conveyed on the Kovara Bîr magazine, Şakiro mentions the dialog between him and the head of Turkish military junta, Kenan Evren, while Evren was visiting Erzurum after the military coup of 1980. There, Evren had advised Şakiro to continue his art but avoid from political songs. (Conversation with Ahmed Aras, 3rd May 2020). For the published source, see, Ahmed ARAS/ Kilama Kurdî û Denbêjîya Serhedê, Kovara Bîr, Hejmar 7.
accurate. Furthermore, it is a kind of interpreting the past from the viewpoint of today. This approach probably arises from Hamelink’s interviews with the dengbêjs. Since these dengbêjs explained the silence of twenty years as the result of political oppression, Hamelink put this at the center of her argumentation. However, I argue that socio-economic problems and technological developments played a more important role in the decline of dengbêjî between 1980 and 2000 than the Turkish oppression did.

Unlike most of the previous written accounts, Hamelink’s dissertation is remarkable to define dengbêjî as a precise tradition and to distinguish it from other Kurdish oral traditions. However, since dengbêjs and stranbêjs are not analyzed according to the genres which they perform but, instead are analyzed according to their performance places, their roles are still confused. This kind of categorization inevitably leads to confusion because some dengbêjs are also stranbêjs, and as was mentioned earlier, they can also perform at weddings.

Still, it should be noted that Hamelink’s dissertation is the most detailed study of the dengbêjî tradition to date.

Another notable dissertation was written by Duygu Çelik in 2017, in Turkish (Dengbêjî Tradition and Its Effects on Kurdish Theatre in Turkey (in Turkish, 2017). This dissertation is remarkable for its analysis of dengbêjî after 2000. Dengbêj, performance, audience, space, and urbanization, and their interrelations are analyzed in detail. In the first part of its analysis the study focuses on dengbêjî both in its traditional and new formats. The remaining part of the dissertation is devoted to an analysis of Kurdish theaters in Turkey and possible effects of the dengbêjî on Kurdish theatres which she describes as “return to the source”.

Çelik separates dengbêjî before and after 2000 as two different formats, and the new format of dengbêjî which is dated after 2000 is referred as "new dengbêjî" by the author. In this context, the performer is a "new dengbêj" while the audience is a "new civat" (civat: audience, community). Çelik argues that this new form of dengbêjî performance is different since it is centered upon "manifestation" of the performer whereupon the "heterogeneous" audience is in a neutral position and waiting for dengbêj’s "presentation". In contrast, in the traditional format, there was interaction between the performer and audience. There, the

---

102 Not only Hamelink but some other researchers have also been victimized by their interviewees. Citing from some dengbêjs, Scalbert-Yücel is one of the scholars who explain the silence between 1980 and 2000 with the oppression of Turkish government on dengbêjî. See, for some of her interview with dengbêjs regarding this silence: Scalbert-Yücel, Clémence, The Invention of a Tradition: Diyarbakır’s Dengbêj Project, European Journal of Turkish Studies, 10 | 2009, p.13.

103 For a detailed analysis of this topic, see: “The Period of Dengbêjî” in this chapter.

104 Çelik, Duygu; Dengbêjîklî Geleneği ve Kürt Tiyatrosuna Etkisi, PhD Dissertation (In Turkish), Istanbul University, Social Sciences Institute, 2017, pp. 194-216.
performer did not make a specific attempt to “show off” because he was already a special guest of a "homogeneous" audience where all of which came from the same village and were usually relatives of each other. In contrast to the traditional dengbêjî format, the new dengbêj -who usually performs at the Dengbêjs’ Houses- is the "owner" of the space, and "presents" for "heterogeneous" audiences. Also, the focal point of audience shifted from narrative to the performance itself. Thus, the performers do not only narrate but they try to show off with their clothes, mimics, gests etc.\textsuperscript{105}

However, this dual analysis also confirms the continuation of the tradition. Contrary to other oral traditions, such as the Turkish Ashik tradition, dengbêjî is not dead, and it is surviving in a new format, Çelik argues.\textsuperscript{106}

While arguing a continuation and survival attitude between the old and new formats of the tradition, the evidence Çelik presents is related to performing kilams. Although the attention of audience has shifted from narrative to performance, since a kilam is still told in the traditional way, it is impossible to argue that this new format is not dengbêjî, she says.

We should note that, while arguing the continuity of tradition in older and newer forms, Çelik ignores that new kilams are not produced and all that is done is repetition of the old. Obviously, it can be said that the tradition is going in a new direction, with new audiences and performers, in a diverse space and context. Yes, kilams are still performed like the traditional way but there is no production of new kilams. Like the Turkish Ashik tradition,\textsuperscript{107} all dengbêjs are repeating old kilams.\textsuperscript{108}

As another production, Barbara Sträuli recently edited, translated, and introduced the collection of Oskar Mann which contains Kurdish epics and tribal stories from Urfa. The book’s novelty consists mainly in three points: investigating the different concept of history as it appears in the oral tradition of Kurdish Southwest; the technique of transcription used by western researchers before arrival of tape-recorders; and the possible ways in which the transmission of sung epics frequently changed over two or more generations of singers. Although the book constantly confuses sazbend, dengbêj, çîrokbêj and stranbêj, and calls all together “singers”, its analysis regarding shifting names, territories, and times between

\textsuperscript{105}Çelik, Duygu; Dengbêjîlik Geleneği ve Kürt Tiyatrosuna Etkisi, PhD Dissertation (In Turkish), Istanbul University, Social Sciences Institute, 2017, pp. 71,75,79,80,83,252.

\textsuperscript{106}Çelik, Duygu; Dengbêjîlik Geleneği ve Kürt Tiyatrosuna Etkisi, PhD Dissertation (In Turkish), Istanbul University, Social Sciences Institute, 2017, p. 79.

\textsuperscript{107}The Turkish Ashik tradition will be analyzed on the next pages of this chapter.

\textsuperscript{108}Since they cannot produce new kilams they simply repeat old ones. For the reasons of unproductivity, see; The Period of Dengbêjî, at the end of this chapter.
different versions of some epics dictated by different performers from different locations and generations is noteworthy.\(^\text{109}\)

In the recent years, while the number of articles about dengbêjî in Turkish and Kurdish are increasing, some symposiums are being held by various Turkish universities with the consent of the Turkish government.

Yet, the quality of the resulting publications is not as high as expected. As an example, we may analyze the presentations submitted at the *International Symposium of Dengbêj Culture and Dengbêjs* held by Şırnak University in Şırnak on April 19-20th, 2019.\(^\text{110}\) Although most of the presented papers directly focus on dengbêjî, there is not a single presentation which reflects adequate research and background. All that is repetition of each other, and glorification of the tradition.

This glorification issue should be reviewed carefully. It is remarkably interesting to see how the attitude of Kurdish people -including popular and scholarly accounts- have jumped from ignoring the tradition to glorifying it. To get a deeper understanding of this glorification, we may analyze some articles published in the last ten years.

Notably, there are several newly written articles by people who are researching the role of women in dengbêjî. For instance, in her article which mainly focuses on a specific female dengbêjî course in Van, and questions the role of patriarchy in dengbêjî, Çelik claims that dengbêjî represents the voice of women through the theme of kilams.\(^\text{111}\) Öztürk shares the same idea in her thesis which examines the role of female dengbêjs in Kurdish society.\(^\text{112}\) Both of these accounts claim that since the traditional Kurdish society did not permit women to perform in public, women took control of kilams through their subjects. Furthermore, Bozkuş claims that women have the advantage of being more sensitive and having a higher voice quality than men. Thus, their kilams are better than those of male dengbêjs despite the fact women are not permitted to perform just anywhere, confining their performances to

---

\(^{109}\) Sträuli, Barbara, “*Our Steppe is Vast...*”, *Kurdish epics and tribal stories from Urfa, 1906*, Collected by Oskar Mann, Edited. Translated and introduced by Barbara Sträuli, Harrassowitz Verlag, Wiesbaden, 2021.

\(^{110}\) https://dengbejliksempozyumu.sirnak.edu.tr (Accessed on 4th April 2021)


narrow circles. Similarly, Schäfers argues that originally it was women who mastered the art of singing kilams, but this art was stolen by men via public shaming. However, none of these accounts explain why, unlike the dengbêjs, female stranbêjs used to perform their art in the same traditional society for centuries.

We should note that as other existing epic traditions, dengbêjî centered around manhood. Thus, while dengbêji and kilam evolved around patriarchal values and rejected women performers, other traditions such as stranbêji and çirokbêji were open to both males and females. It looks that confusion on stranbêji and dengbêji has lead deviancy in the argumentations of these scholars.

Moreover, as a theme, women never come on the stage as the main figures in kilams. Like other epic traditions in the world, the backbone of Kurdish kilams is manhood. The narratives evolve around men, and women are usually complementary to the narratives. Furthermore, women usually appear as objects in love stories. The main role is always given to men. Finally, traditionally women were not allowed even to participate in the civat of dengbêjs as audience members. They had to listen to the dengbêj behind curtains because men dominated dengbêji from every aspect.

Alakom takes more steps in glorification and claims that "women have a throne in Kurdish folklore, and they have built hegemony. In the Kurdish folklore, women own words, and kilams belong to girls". This claim is absolutely wishful thinking, because it does not match with reality. Unfortunately, women never had such a dominant role in the traditional Kurdish society neither in folklore nor in kilam.

To address this subject, Yıldırımçakar discusses the same topic and questions the given role to women in dengbêjî in an article where he distinguishes dengbêjî from çirokbêjî and stranbêjî. Although there are women dengbêjs in contemporary society, there is no evidence to argue that it was so in the past, he accurately indicates. He also shares his doubts on names such as Gulê, Pero, and Hemide, who have been referred to as female dengbêj of the early 20th century, stating that in essence they were not dengbêjs but probably stranbêjs.

---

114 Schäfers, Marlene; From shameful to public voice: Women dengbêjs, the work of pain, and Kurdish history, Kürt Tarihi, Vol. 26, September 2016, pp 24-29.
Indeed, regarding patriarchal societies and their epic oral traditions, such as dengbêjî and naqqâli one would need strong evidence to prove the dominant role of women in these traditions. Contemporary changes may be confusing but, how is it possible to imagine women at a Diwanxane, or Chaikhane or Hujra-i Majlis performing an art in the 20th century or earlier?

Glorification of dengbêjî is not limited to the role of women. It exists in other themes as well. Defining it as a Kurdish national art is one of these as was shown earlier. As another example of veneration, Hamelink and Barış argue that dengbêjî is a "secular" Kurdish oral tradition which had disappeared by the 1980s but was revitalized in the 2000s. It is surprising to read from these two authors that dengbêjî is considered secular. Dengbêjî is derived from a culture fed by Sunni-Islam, even by a particular religious school -the Shafi’ite one.117 and several kilams are full of hate towards Christians (especially Armenians and Assyrians since they were sharing the same territory). Likewise, even the Shia is described as beyond the pale of Islam, so how can one argue that dengbêjî is a secular oral tradition?118

Another aspect of this process of exaltation is the social status of dengbêjs in 20th century. In contrast to the argument that dengbêjs had a relatively high position in society, most of dengbêjs of the 20th century lived and died in poverty. Dengbêj Reso had to move from village to village at least a dozen of times to be able to make a living. Dengbêj Huseynê Farê sold his home-made cassettes in the old bazaar of Diyarbekir to be able to survive at the end of his life, in the early 1990s. Baqî Xido spent his whole life driving a horse carriage to make a living. In short, between the 1920s and 1990s, dengbêjs were economically desperate. Furthermore, after 1980, they were also disregarded politically and culturally.

Even in the earlier times, dengbêjs never held such an important position as is imagined today. It was thought that dengbêjî do not have importance beyond their own circle of listeners. Ahmed Aras says when he went to the village of Evdalê Zeynikê in 1966 and asked about Evdalê Zeynikê’s life story, the villagers were surprised. They were asking him "as a well-educated man what are you going to do with Evdalê Zeynikê? Don’t you have something else to be busy with?" From their point of view, Evdalê Zeynikê was just one of the peasants who performed kilams during his lifetime, nothing more.119 Similar to other oral traditions,

---

117 Shafi’i is one of the four madhhab̄s of Sunni-Islam. Others are Hanafi, Maliki, and Hanbali. Most Kurdish people are belonged to the Shafi’i madhab̄.


119 See; interview with Ahmed Aras, Dünya TV, Rû Bi Rû, by Nevzat Keskin, 6th December 2013.
dengbêjs were not considered as specialists in the society since they did not practice dengbêjî for a living.  

However, since this scene changed after 2000, and dengbêjs become popular figures of the society most people project the situation of today on the dengbêjî and dengbêjs of 50-100 years ago.

3.2 The Locations of Dengbêjî

A dengbêj is a local voice before all else and he performs throughout his local region. However, it is not easy to draw exact borders on the location of dengbêjî because the definitions one adopts about dengbêjî also determine its geography. Therefore, if the term dengbêjî were used to describe Kurdish music in general, it would be necessary to describe all the lands in which Kurds live as the geography of dengbêjî. However, dengbêjî is not common among all Kurdish people, but only among the Kurds who speak the Kurmanji dialect. Furthermore, even in some Kurmanji-speaking areas this tradition did not exist. Thus, dengbêjî is common among certain population of Kurds, in particular geographic areas.

If a map were drawn showing the areas where dengbêjî is traditionally common, it would look as follows:

---


121 In their common article Hamelink and Bariş investigate the names of locations through 84 kilams which Hamelink had collected during her field research. In these 84 kilams 180 different locations exist. While 17 of them are from Syria and 8 of them are from Anatolia, the rest of names are from Diyarbekir, Mûş and Serhed regions. Furthermore, the locations names from Anatolia are just mentions such as "the oranges of Dortyol" or "the prison of Bursa" etc. Namely, the main body of the locations are Diyarbekir, Mûş and Serhed which are also shown on my map above. See; Hendelmoth & Barış, *Kürt Halk Ozanları Dengbêjlerin Gözünden Sınırlar ve Devlet*, Ismail Beşikçi Vakfî, Kürt Çalışmaları/ Bahar Akademisi-1, p. 67.

122 These maps are prepared by the author of this dissertation to make the topic clearer and more understandable to the readers. They are not derived from some exact statistics because these kinds of statistics do not exist. Thus, these maps are probably the first examples in this field.
As is shown on the map, some Kurmanji speaking areas are traditionally not familiar with dengbêjî. Namely, dengbêjî is not common among all Kurmanj people as well. For example, despite being a crucial part of Kurmanji culture, dengbêjî does not exist in Botan. The Merdîn Plateau in East is the end of dengbêjî areas in this neighborhood.

It is also possible to evaluate dengbêjî as çiyayî (mountaineer) and deştî (lowlander) as is shown on the following map. Dengbêjî in these two areas show distinctions especially in the way of training. The çiyayî dengbêjs from Serhed and Xerzan regions, which are mountainous, were usually trained in a master-apprentice relationship while the deştî dengbêjs from Amed, Mêrdîn and Ruha regions were mainly self-taught. Nonetheless, we should note that other possible differences between these two areas may need some further investigation.

123 The map is designed by the author on a map taken from: https://www.google.com/maps/@38.3233467,41.4038505,7.14z
Additionally, as is shown on the following map, in the plain of Mêrdîn, particularly around Nisêbîn, Cizîrê and Qoser- (Turk: Mardin; Nusaybin, Cizre and Kızıltepe), and in Iraqi Kurdistan in Shingal and Doskî areas there are performers who perform kilam, usually accompanied by musical instruments. In these three areas, the genre is interchangeably called kilam or stran. However, when we look at the content of these compositions, they are essentially kilam, and almost all of them are borrowed from dengbêjî areas shown on the maps 1 and 2. However, the performers are usually (though not always) stranbêjs. In fact, as will be shown in the next section based on a definition of these genres, historically no dengbêjî tradition existed in these three areas. This hybrid genre looks like a kind of deformed kilam which causes difficulties for researchers regarding the definition of kilams.

Obviously, kilams such as Lawikê Madeni, Qenc Xelîl, Elikê Batê, Bavê Fexrî, Bavê Şikrî, Ehmedê Mala Mûsa, Mîrza Beg, Salîho, Edûlê which are performed by performers such as Kawis Agha, Seîd Aghayê Cizîrê, Mihemed Arîf Cizîrê, Xelîl Bakozî, Şikrî Rêkani, Casim Şikakî, Mihemed Pîro, Saïfdîn Doskî, Eskenderê Gulî from these three areas are taken from the North, from the traditional dengbêjî areas shown above. Nonetheless, there are some

---

124 The map is designed by the author on a map taken from: https://www.google.com/maps/@38.3233467,41.4038505,7.14z
exceptional kilams such as the one about Sheikh Mehmûd Berzencî,\textsuperscript{125} which is obviously different from the other works mentioned above. The origin of this kind of kilams needs further investigation to enable us to speak more precisely about these hybrid compositions.

![Map 3: Additional Three (Hybrid) Dengbêjî Areas\textsuperscript{126}](https://www.google.com/maps/@38.3233467,41.4038505,7.14z)

\textbf{3.3 Dengbêjî and Other Kurdish Oral/Musical Traditions}

Since there is a common confusion in distinguishing dengbêjî from other Kurdish-Kurmanji musical/narrative traditions such as çîrokbêjî and stranbêjî, one needs to explore the historical-cultural context in which these genres have emerged and co-existed.

There has not been much ethnographic research about dengbêjî. People who wrote on Kurdish music, mainly concentrated on the musical aspects and melodies of Kurdish music. Therefore, they focused primarily on the stran rather than the kilam. Furthermore, as we will see in the next pages of this study, on popular accounts kilam and stran are confused, and their names are used interchangeably. However, the Kurdish-Kurmanji narrative-musical genres consists of three main styles: dengbêjî, stranbêjî, and çîrokbêjî.

\textsuperscript{125} Sheikh Mehmûdê Berzencî (1878-1956), the Kurdish tribal leader who led a riot against British troops in Iraqi Kurdistan in 1918.

\textsuperscript{126} The map is designed by the author on a map taken from: https://www.google.com/maps/@38.3233467,41.4038505,7.14z
One of the reasons behind the confusion regarding Kurdish musical and narrative genres is that some dengbêjs are also stranbêj or çîrokbêj. Moreover, the absence of a consensus on the structural and thematic boundaries between these traditions makes it difficult to reach absolute definitions.

Bearing this confusion in mind, it may be useful to offer a short description of each tradition and genre to distinguish them from each other, and then to focus on dengbêjî in detail.

3.3.1 Stranbêjî

Stranbêjî is principally distinguished by its melodic structure, in which the melody is more dominant than in dengbêjî. It predominantly consists of short songs where lyrics may be about any topic in life. Stran is cognate to the verb strîn, meaning singing. To define the character of strans, Blum and Hassanpour give a specific definition of stran, where they put goranî and stran in the same category, stating that:

“Stran is more common almost everywhere in Kurdistan. [...] songs called goranî or stran are potentially more popular than other vocal genres, since they are short, non-narrative, and easier to learn”.127

Since stran is common among all Kurds the researchers who studied Kurdish music mostly focused on stran. Stran is essentially a musical form where lyrics are considered only to be complementary. Vartabed Komitas (1869-1935), known as the founder of Armenian classical music, also focused on strans while exploring Kurdish music, and tried to categorize their musical forms. In later years, many other researchers studying Kurdish music naturally tended to primarily study strans.128

Kurdish strans have an intense musical structure, which is why hundreds or maybe thousands of Kurdish strans were converted129 into Turkish and adapted to be included in the TRT (Turkish Radio-Television) repertoire. TRT had an official monopoly on radio and TV

---


129 They have used the music but have adopted totally different lyrics in Turkish. Therefore, the music of strans have been stolen, and the lyrics are Turkified.
broadcasting in Turkey until 1990. The issue of introducing Kurdish stran as "Turkish Folk Music" was a complicated process that included some singers of Kurdish origin who served the Turkish government. These singers were followed by some other popular ones in the 1990s and 2000s. Ethnomusicologist Christina Hough comments on the interactions between Turkish and Kurdish songs, calling attention to how some of these strans have been reconstructed to find a place within the state archives:

“[…] the Kurdish language was officially declared to be no more than a bastardized Persian dialect picked up by ‘Turks’ on the border who ‘had forgotten their authentic ‘Turkishness.’ Likewise, music from Eastern Turkey/Western Kurdistan became reconstituted as 'Turkish' in the state archive and in the repertories of popular singers who had to obscure their Kurdish origins to build their careers.”

Traditionally, a stranbêj could be a man or a woman, depending on the environment. Especially at weddings, women could sing strans as a choir and this was not unusual among Kurds. After all, men and women were dancing together, accompanied by strans, as there was no segregation of the sexes in Kurdish dance practices.

Stranbêjî and dengbêjî are therefore different in both musical format and in terms of audience. Stran mainly consists of lyrics centering upon love, happiness, separation, death, nature and they have no limitation as to subject matter. Everything related to people and nature can be the subject of strans. Even animals can play leading roles. Also, everyone can be in the audience of strans; men, women, elderly people, and children can listen to a stran with the same interest. In contrast, the audience of kilam substantially consists of adults. Since the narratives are too intensive and the melody is not at the center of this art, it is usually considered boring among children and teenagers.

3.3.2 Çîrokbebêjî

On the other hand, in Kurdish rural settlements with heavy winters, çîrokbebêjî emerged as an activity appropriate for winter nights. The Kurdish verbal root çîr has associations of lying and of the surreal. Çîrok refers the tales which contains lies and surrealistic entities as well. Çîrok means tale and all stories including fables can find a place within this category.

130 Such as Celal Güzelses (1899-1959), Nuri Sesigüzel (1937-…), Recep Kaymak (1942-…).

131 Such as İbrahim Tatlıses (1952-…).

Until the 1980s, when television was not common in Kurdistan, especially in the villages, şevbuhurk was a familiar practice. Şev means night in Kurdish, and buhurst means passing. Therefore, şevbuhurk means passing the night (with tales). In the Kurdish villages in which the extended family is the norm, usually one of the elderly family members was the storyteller or çîrokbêj of the family. However, there were also people called çîrokbêj who were known in their own regional circles. These people who wandered between villages, telling tales in return for small presents, were typically male.

The potential audience of a çîrokbêj was quite varied. Especially çîroks about love and heroism captured the attention of people of all ages. However, children’s tales were usually told by the storyteller of the household who, for example, could be the grandmother.

3.3.3 Dengbêjî

Unlike çîrok and stran, kilam is considered as history by Kurmanj people. As it was stated earlier in this chapter, the sense of history among Kurmanj people is mainly based on orally performed narratives. Since literacy was not common among the population, these narratives comprise and inform a big part of the community’s collective memory. Society conveys its history from generation to generation via oral narratives.

Kilam has a consecutive structure. Each event in the narrative explains the next one, continuing along in a sequential order. Dengbêjs tell the events as they were seen or heard in a certain order with musical improvisation. Literally, deng means sound in Kurdish and bêj refers to the act of telling. Researchers have usually described dengbêjî as a genre in which narrative plays key role.

The texts narrated by dengbêjs, the kilam, are not only told but also sung. However, since musical instruments are not used in this genre, dengbêjî is more dominantly narrative than musical. Music in dengbêjî has the function of making the storyteller more fluent and making it easier to remember the words. Therefore, music stands in the background. When a foreigner listens to a dengbêj, their first question would be ‘what does it tell?’ Even if the story has a melodic background, it will be primarily perceived as a narrative by audience.

Certainly, kilam has a melody and rhythm. Nonetheless, each dengbêj can change the tone or duration—even the rhythm- of the kilam according to his preferences as what matters is the content, the narration. For the audience, the musical aspect, and even the vocal quality of a dengbêj is less important than the text, since the important elements are the content, interpretation of the narrative, and the way in which it is rendered.
Music in dengbêjî has the function of facilitating memorization of the words. It is a mnemonic aid as Vansina explains it through African oral traditions.\footnote{Vansina, J., \textit{Oral Tradition as History}, The University of Wisconsin Press, Madison, 1985, p.46.} Keeping a long and detailed text without rhythm is much harder than memorizing a melodic text. Given that each dengbêj memorizes tens of narratives or even more, the need for a musical component is clear. It would be almost impossible to memorize such quantities of texts in prose form.\footnote{We may remember it from memorizing of Qur’an. Consisting of thousands of \textit{ayat}, it is very hard to memorize Qur’an in prose form. However, since it is written in a rhytmical manner people can easily memorize it in a melodic way.}

Previously in this study, it was argued that dengbêjî is a Kurmanji tradition.\footnote{Hamelink states that dengbêjî is not the expression of a unified Kurdish culture, but as one possible expression of Kurdishness at particular historical moments. See; Hamelink, Wendelmoet, “\textit{The Sung Home/ Narrative, morality, and the Kurdish nation}”. PhD dissertation, University of Leiden, 2014, Introduction, p. 43.} Besides the contents of the kilams the best proof of this argument is the identity of dengbêjs. Significantly, all dengbêjs are Kurmanji. Even as an exception, traditionally, there is not a single dengbêj who is not Kurmanji. The reason for this to be found in the content of dengbêjî and the genre, kilam. If one is not a native Kurmanji and not involved in the culture of Kurmanjs, the narratives will sound meaningless because all kilams are based on the imagination of Kurmanji speaking people. In other words, it is based on the Kurmanji worldview. As it is expressed in the title of this dissertation, based on the Kurmanji culture, dengbêjî is a world created through words. Admittedly it has melody and rhythm, but the essential meaning is embedded in the words. Therefore, the understanding of kilam is dependent on the knowledge of the words and culture from which the words are derived. This is like other “high context cultures” as defined by Hall\footnote{Hall, Edward T., \textit{Beyond Culture}, Anchor Books, Doubleday, NY, 1976, pp. 36, 79.} who argues that in high-context cultures “meaning and context are inextricably bound up each other”.

A deep understanding of kilams depends on several different components. Firstly, one should state that having Kurmanji as a mother tongue is not sufficient to grasp the dengbêjî narratives entirely. Understanding of local idioms and concepts is crucial. As stated in the earlier pages, kilam is meaningless for children since they cannot grasp the meaning of the words. As they grow up and become familiar with the words and the context in which the words are used, they tend to be more interested in kilam.

Secondly, being familiar with the situation of the event and the local culture where the story takes place is particularly important. An audience who is unfamiliar with daily rituals of
rural life, the habits of the pre-modern society, their values, and even their costumes will be at a loss from the very beginning.

Thirdly, the perspective of kilams is completely rural and pastoral. None of the technological tools of recent times can be found in these narratives. Words, idioms, and concepts are all about rural life. In these narratives we can see neither the conservative atmosphere of small towns nor the relatively free and anonymous social milieu of big cities. However, all the details of village life, people, animals, clothing, and cultural codes of bravery/honor etc. can be observed. As we will see in the third chapter, the narratives clearly reflect the lifestyle, culture, and values of Kurmanji rural life. This is also a contributory factor to the end of tradition; see below under the title of “The Period of Dengbéji”.

Classification of kilam has so far been an open discussion. People have classified kilams under several subtitles such as kilamên şer, kilamên mèrañî, kilamên dilan, kilamên eşîrtî etc. In this study, kilams have been analyzed mainly within three categories, each of which focuses on a subject, i.e., love stories, familial-tribal conflicts, and clashes with government forces.\(^\text{137}\)

The first category of kilam is about varieties of love stories which are derived from daily life experiences. People mentioned in the narratives were mainly existing people, who were mostly Kurmanj but sometimes belonged to other groups such as speakers of different languages and dialects or members of other sects or religions. These people have also been described in their specific identities. For example, Elîyê Qoleghasî is described by his rank in the Ottoman army (Turkish: Kolağası, lieutenant commander) and Metran Îsa is identified with his religious status (Metropolitan). On the other hand, Eyşana Elî is identified with her familial root (Eyşan, the daughter of Elî). In these kinds of kilams identifying people as Kurmanj is exceedingly rare. Kilams about love stories consist of approximately thirty-five per cent of all existing kilams.

The second category of kilams, tribal-familial conflicts, includes both tribal-familial roots and Kurmanj identity. Being Kurmanj appears in these kilams as an additional identity, although familial-tribal roots are still dominant in identification. In this category, all people are existing persons. The described events are familiar to members of the community and

\(^{137}\) Of course, this is an open discussion, and there are different kind of categorizations as well. For example, Hamelink divides kilams of fighting into two categories: Battle songs (about internal battles) and Rebel songs (about clashes with the state). Hamelink, Wendelmoet, “The Sung Home/ Narrative, morality, and the Kurdish nation”, PhD dissertation, University of Leiden, 2014, Introduction, p. 60. On the other hand, in their anthology, Güneş and Şimşek have categorized dengbêj Şakiro’s kilams as following: 183 kilams of love stories, 35 kilams of revolts, 27 kilams of tribal-familial clashes, 18 kilams of nature, and 3 epics. See; Güneş, Ömer & Şimşek, İbrahim, Antolojiya Dengbêjan, Volume, Nubihar Yay., 2018.
known by them. Almost half of the existing kilams are about tribal-familial conflicts. Furthermore, many of the kilams about love stories relate to already existing tribal-familial conflicts, and they usually end in sadness or separation because of those tribal-familial troubles.

The third category is more complicated. As more and detailed examples in the third chapter of this dissertation will be discussed, people may be identified with their familial-tribal origins, as being Kurmanj, or sometimes as being Kurd. This kind of identification sometimes occurs in different kilams but sometimes we can see all these identities in a single kilam. There are no imaginary kilams about fighting with government forces. All people and events represent real historical events, and they are known to the people. Approximately ten per cent of kilams are about clashes with governmental forces. The rest of existing kilams which is consisting of a small per cent of the total corpus are about nature, personal stories, or other different topics.

Except some of the love stories, both dengbêjs and audience did not have doubt about the truth of the events and characters. Thus, they considered the narratives as historical facts. Those who are the subject of kilams are people who have existed; kilams do not include imaginary heroes. For the exact same reason, it is possible to say that dengbêji is a form of a historical transmission process. This can be shown by investigating the history of people and events that are the subjects of the narratives.

When a dengbêj recounts events or conflicts, he does not have distance and objectivity towards the subject of his narration such as a scholar should have. For example, when the dengbêj narrates some conflict one can understand which side the dengbêj is inclined, although he does not state it in an apparent way. Nonetheless, this point usually does not prevent him from expressing the braveries of the opposite side.

Of course, this is not a strict and fixed rule. There are also made-to-order kilams which place the local aghas (local rulers) in the center of the narration and praise them. This kind of kilam has been composed exclusively for a local lord or agha, upon their order. In exchange for gifts, dengbêj constructs his kilam by putting the agha in the center of the narration, and even sometimes changing the reality to favor him. Nevertheless, because collective memory tended to reject them, such kilams are not as common or popular as others.

So, it can be argued that these kinds of kilams are a small portion of Kurdish oral literature when compared with the entire corpus. Generally, the dengbêj sees himself as a person who is responsible for conveying a past event truthfully. Hence, the dengbêj is a person who colors the narration by adding his own words to make the narration interesting. In
fact, such coloring is inevitable. For an audience to be capable of listening to a narration lasting for hours in some cases, the narrator must vitalize it by going beyond a mere transmission of a series of events.

3.4 Performance of Kilam

It is necessary to approach dengbêjî not only as a way of narrating the past and an oral tradition, but also as a performance in its classic form. While telling his kilam, a dengbêj is conveying history and engaging in a live performance. Thus, the location, atmosphere, and time in which the dengbêj tells his kilam, and his relationship with the audience needs to be examined. Following the definition of Baumann, we can say that dengbêjî performance is a communicative behavior and an event which is presented in a particular way for the audience.\textsuperscript{138}

It should be stressed that the performance of a dengbêj is not a part of daily life - whilst, on the other hand, daily life is also full of performances\textsuperscript{139} and his performances are marked as special occasions. Especially in the traditional form of dengbêjî, which was mainly held in villages, the very arrival of a dengbêj in a village was a special event. Each performance was a singular activity for the audience because it was unique and unrepeatable. Each performance was unlike the previous one. So, each audience was trying to grasp the whole narrative from the dengbêj, to become familiar with it. Grasping the narrative was also the way of becoming a dengbêj, especially around Amed, Ruha and Mêrdîn where a master-apprentice practice was not common in the tradition.\textsuperscript{140} Then, when tape-recorders became available in the early 1970s, audiences began to recording performances on cassettes. They did so to be able to listen to the kilams in the absence of the dengbêj, and to share with their friends and relatives.

\textsuperscript{138} Performance is [a mode of communicative behavior and a type of communicative event] […] [performance usually suggests an aesthetically marked and heightened mode of communication, framed in a special way and put on display for an audience.] See; Baumann, Richard, “Folklore; Performance.” In: Folklore, Cultural Performances, and Popular Entertainments / A Communication-centered Handbook, Edited by Richard Baumann, Oxford University Press, New York,1992, p. 41.

\textsuperscript{139} “The term of ‘performance’ refers to all the activities of an individual which occurs during a period marked by his continuous presence before a particular set of observers and which has some influence on the observers” Goffman, Erving, The Presentation of Self in Everyday Life, Doubleday, New York,1959, p. 32.

\textsuperscript{140} See, the maps of “The Locations of Dengbêji” on previous pages this chapter.
Traditional performances were usually held in various places. For example, in some localities it was performed in the *diwankhane*, but it could be held in an ordinary place too. For example, in a house or a garden, but it was still a special event for audiences. They were concentrating on the performance in silence and occasionally commented on the narrative with short remarks to express their feelings.

The relationship between the dengbêj and his audience is a key aspect of such performances. The dengbêj, while telling his kilam, engages in a live performance, and this is a kind of “[…] life blood for most of the poetic traditions” as Kreyenbroek states.¹⁴¹

In such performances, carried out with words, gestures, intonations, and body language, the dengbêj’s connection with the audience is crucial to sustain the interest of the public. It is necessary to emphasize that the dengbêj is an open space artist. Therefore, the dengbêjî recordings done in studios and live recordings of dengbêjs can never be the same. As opposed to a sterile studio environment in which the sound quality is high, a dengbêj who is together with his audience in an interactive atmosphere is much more creative and concentrated on the performance. In such a performance, the sound is by no means as high-quality as it is in a studio, but it is more vivid and natural. Moreover, dengbêjî can best be understood based on such rich and effortless performances. For a dengbêj to perform his art, all he needs is a natural atmosphere and the presence of audience. This is also the reason why dengbêjî did not disappear but continued to exist during the long period of prohibition of the Kurdish language implemented by the Turkish government in the 20th century. If it required a group of musicians, a studio, or a license, most probably dengbêjî would not have been able to survive.

In a typical performance, the dengbêj is regarded as an ordinary member of the community. Though the indoor setting is full of people who are prepared to listen to him, a strict divide between performer and audience is not felt. After the completion of daily activities such as conversations, and sometimes eating and drinking, a kilam is requested from the dengbêj. The dengbêj usually does not start to perform his kilam unless he is asked. When the audience is ready, the dengbêj starts his performance sometimes immediately, and sometimes after one or two hawîn.¹⁴²

---


¹⁴² Hahîn or Hawin is a kind of shout done by the dengbêj for intonating his voice.
As stated in the literature review, audiences of dengbêjs in traditional performances were predominantly male. Women mostly used to listen to the performance from a reserved place. They were not allowed to join the civat (audience).

A dengbêji performance in old times generally took place in houses or guest rooms in the Kurmanj settlements. This also means that a dengbêj performed his kilam in front of a group of people gathered in a house in a village or small town. These predominantly male audiences consisted of people who knew each other, since they were mostly relatives. As Vansina shows in the case of many African oral traditions, the audience did not watch the dengbêj’s performance passively. It was in a semi-active position because of its reactions, gestures, and interference in the narration. In fact, sometimes the dengbêj stopped the narration and asked questions of a member of the audience, to revive the narration. As the dengbêj motivates the civat with his kilam, the civat also inspires the dengbêj.

Nonetheless, this kind of performance changed over time. While live performances were still being held in rural areas, radio broadcasts had started on Radio Yerevan to broadcast in Kurmanji in Armenia (1955). Except these early recordings of dengbêjs on Radio Yerevan, dengbêjs were not recorded in studios until the second half of the 1970s. For dengbêjs, who mostly lived within the borders of Turkey, there were not many options other than performing their kilams in the traditional way. After that, some dengbêjs made recordings through opportunities provided by local amateur voice-recorders, starting in the late 1970s. Nevertheless, such recordings are few and did not have the same impact on the society because following the practice of Radio Yerevan, they shortened their kilams and performed them with instrumental accompaniment to modernize them. Traditionally, a kilam is performed without musical instruments. A dengbêj is an artist of voice, not the instrument.

143 Today this situation has changed, and especially in the cities the performances which are based on some cultural centers have been reshaped to be more artistic-performative and, to be open to all individuals. However, this is a different case, and this changed version of dengbêji has been analyzed under the title of “The Period of Dengbêji” in this chapter.


145 In her dissertation, Çelik shows the differences of “new dengbêji” which appeared in the early 2000s, in the context of performance, performer, audience, and space from its traditional form. See; Çelik, Duygu; Dengbêjlik Gelenegi ve Kürt Tiyatrosuna Etkisi, PhD Dissertation (In Turkish), Istanbul Technical University, Social Sciences Institute, 2017, pp.7-89.

146 It has been seen that most of these recordings transmitted on digital media and some of which can be reached over www.youtube.com have been restored through methods like filtering etc. with the purpose of increasing the sound quality and enabling better understanding. However, many of them have also been degenerated by being remixed.
Luckily, the main parts of kilams have been recorded in an amateur way onto cassettes in private houses without commercial purpose. These amateur recordings are quite significant in terms of reflecting the genre, though they are not particularly good in terms of sound quality. In such cases, the recording is copied from one cassette to another, and the sound quality is low. Therefore, it is not easy to fully understand the recordings.

These recordings differ greatly from the studio ones: firstly, the dengbêji is recorded in its natural form by the audience. Secondly, the connection between dengbêj and audience can be understood clearly from these productions. Thirdly, these are the only audible sources of some of the chief dengbêjs of the past.

These recordings are not done by an arranged outsider, for example, an entertainer or researcher which could change the mood of the whole performance. They are done during live performances, in their natural surroundings, by members of the community for their own purpose: Only to listen to them in the absence of the dengbêj. In homemade recordings, before the dengbêj began his performance, the cassette owners were preparing their tapes, and begin recording after a hand signal was given by the dengbêj. The following process was entirely determined by the dengbêj. If he wanted to take a break, he gave another hand signal; the tapes were paused, and a break was taken. At the end of the performance, members of the audience put a small amount of money, as a present under the cushion where the dengbêj sat. In the earlier periods, especially in villages where money was not commonly used, dengbêjs were given gifts such as living animals or grain in lieu of money. In such cases the dengbêj surely expected some reward, but giving a present or not was completely at the discretion of the audience. In other words, there was no compulsory payment in the sense we understand it today.

With his narratives, the dengbêj created a historical bridge for the audiences to experience their past. When the dengbêj starts to perform his art, time stops: the dengbêj, transports his audiences out of their daily lives and sends them to another place and time. This type of influence resembles an itihâsa which Guha defines as “amazement narrative”.

---

147 However, in the late 1970s, in some Kurdish city centers, based on the people’s demand for these tape-cassettes, they gained a kind of unregistered local commerciality. Thus, it was possible to buy some of them on the stands in the old part of the cities. This trade did not add some revenue to dengbêjs because the cassette-sellers would simply copy and sell the existing recordings.

148 For example, the foremost Kurdish dengbêj Reso has left only some home-made recordings during his whole life.


150 Itihâsa means history in Hindi, and mainly consists of epic narratives. The famous epics of India, the Ramayana, and the Mahabharata are also Itihasa. Kurmanj people also consider kilam as history, not a tale or art.
The narratives talk about certain events to the audience. It is common for them to request the same narrative from the dengbêj repeatedly. No performance is a repetition of the previous one because it is a new performance, namely, a new narrative. This situation looks like the performance of *Itihâsa* as Guja describes:

“It is in this sense that itihâsa is a narrative of wonder. It is not tied to any particular experience and exhausted, therefore, by retelling [...] the once-told and once-heard is never the same when repeated next time. The once-again is separated from each previous instance by an irreducible hiatus, which would continue to generate variations, and with them wonder, at every retelling.”  

This situation is related to the perception of the society, which is especially important for understanding the impact of the narratives. So, any time the civat listen to a dengbêj, they do not perceive the kilam as the repetition of the previous performance. Therefore, a retelling is an entirely new creation by the dengbêj, allowing the society to re-imagine a familiar subject.

These performances were also the way in which cultural memory was created. Even though the audiences knew the narrative, each performance strengthened their memory. The core of the narrative, the heroes, places etc., found a permanent place in the collective memory. It was sharpened, polished, and reshaped, but always evolved around a core narrative.

In later periods, especially in the 1970s, due to the proliferation of portable radios, tape-recorders, and the increasing opportunities of transportation, the role of the dengbêjs began to evolve. Yet, they were still very special figures, mainly because not everyone could become a dengbêj and they were not always there.

However, new developments and propagation of recording techniques reduced the public’s dependence on live performances by the dengbêjs. Finally, along with the proliferation of television in the early1980s, dengbêjî began to go into decline.  

---


152 For a detailed analysis of this period, see; “The Period of Dengbêjî” in the next pages of this chapter.
3.5 The Period of Dengbêjî

To proclaim a timeframe for an oral tradition is not easy. In fact, “[…] the only place and date that can be given about a tradition is that of the recording of a performance.” Nonetheless, it is worth discussing the period of dengbêjî in the traditional form that we know.

To draw a timeframe for the dengbêjî one must pass over the recordings and address the collective memory to find some clues about the possible beginning of the dengbêjî tradition.

The period of dengbêjî has not become a serious topic of discussion. There is no detailed study that focuses on this topic and attempts to determine the beginning and possible ending of the period. In her detailed dissertation, Hamelink emphasizes that the majority of kilams she studied are situated in the late 19th and early 20th Century. As the reason of this accumulation, she addresses socio-political events of that period such as the downfall of the Ottoman Empire, World War I, and the foundation of the Turkish Republic. However, one may legitimately question why the majority of kilams came into being during this period but not at any other time.

In general, almost all research into dengbêjî has approached it as a timeless issue. In this perception, dengbêjî is accepted - de facto - as an eternal phenomenon that has undergone almost no change in history. However, as is the case with most other oral traditions of the world, it is reasonable to expect that dengbêjî also experienced stages of evolution.

This part of the chapter will discuss and compare dengbêjî with two neighboring traditions from Iran and Anatolia to suggest a possible timeframe for the tradition. However, before discussing it, I raise some questions regarding the approach which considers dengbêjî is timeless:

---


155 Despite being arguable, a notable exception in this case is done by Remezan Alan who discusses the role of dengbêjs among Kurds before the Islamic era and argues that dengbêjs then had other abilities such as being magicians or soothsayers in earlier times. However, they lost their positions after social structure changed, and they became only poets. See, Alan, Remezan; Bendname, Weşanên Awesta, Istanbul, 2009, pp. 267-277.
Above all, if one accepts the dengbêjî as an eternal tradition then one must also answer why the dengbêj Evdalê Zeynikê is the oldest known dengbêj. In the collective memory of the Kurmanj people there is not a single dengbêj before Evdalê Zeynikê. Moreover, the oldest known kilams are about the facts of late 19th Century. If dengbêjî and kilams are eternal phenomena, why do not we know any earlier dengbêjs or kilams? So, one may argue that the tradition did not exist in the form that we know, or it was not widely known. Or one may argue that oral traditions are memorized for no longer than 80-100 years. Another possibility exists: perhaps it declined for some generations and was revitalized at the end of the 19th Century. Furthermore, one might also argue that Evdalê Zeynikê was the founder of this tradition. The question certainly needs further research. Nonetheless, it looks reasonable to argue that the accumulation of kilam material in the second half of 19th century is not a coincidence. It may indicate a possible beginning of the tradition. Nonetheless, since an exact date for the beginning is not known, this study focuses on the tradition after the 1880s, when the cumulative production of kilams started.

In this sense, although it is not possible to make absolute claims regarding the beginning of the period one may put the ending of dengbêjî in its original form (as reflected by traditional recordings of performance) in the 1980s and, test these hypotheses by comparing these data with those of other oral genres in neighboring regions such as Anatolia and Iran.

After the military coup of 1980 in Turkey, three main reasons led to the decline of dengbêjî: first, following the military coup, all political activities were banned in Turkey, but in the Kurdish territories, not only political activities, but all expressions of Kurdish identity were banned. Dengbêjs and qesidebêjs were not particularly oppressed because they were not considered as political and therefore dangerous by the Turkish authorities. On the other hand, a fundamental change was that dengbêjs were no longer supported by the society. Thus, they were left with economic and social problems.

Secondly, technological developments changed the interests of society. Young generations were influenced by pop culture, specifically by arabesque music. The Kurdish

156 Evdalê Zeynikê is the oldest notable dengbêj who is known by the Kurdish-Kurmanj society. He was born in the beginning of the 19th Century in Cemalwerdi, a village of Agirî-Dutax (Turk: Ağrı-Tutak) and, died around 1913.

157 Ahmed Aras (Kurdish writer, researcher, born in 1944 in Erzirom-Qereyazî. Turk: Erzurum-Karayazı) also shares this idea and claim that dengbêj existed with the existence of Kurdish people. See; interview with Ahmed Aras, Dünya TV, Rû Bi Rû, by Nevzat Keskin, 6th December 2013.

158 However, Vansina shows through the accounts of the Time of Darkness which refers to a volcanic eruption in the New Guinea Highlands that collective memory may reach 300-400 years back in history. See; Vansina, J., Oral Tradition as History, Madison, Wisconsin, 1985, pp. 188-189.
villages acquired electricity and television in the mid-1980s. Therefore, villagers were inclined to spend their time watching TV programs rather than having to wait for a Dengbëj to arrive. As a result, by the end of 1980s, Dengbëjs could not find an audience as easily as before even in the villages. Furthermore, in the early 1990s, the Turkish military evacuated thousands of Kurdish settlements in the rural areas and displaced millions of villagers with their “anti-terror policy”. Thus, Dengbëji lost its natural environment in certain areas, which contributed to its decline.

Thirdly, in the 1980s the social structure of Kurdish society started to change. Urbanization accelerated and people who moved to the cities faced economic problems. People no longer had time to become a civat for Dengbëjs as they used to do in the villages. As a result, Dengbëjs could not readily find audiences like they had in the past. This had two impacts; decreasing motivation and economic problems. Previously, having a civat, provided Dengbëjs with both motivation and economic opportunities. Thus, in the 1980s most Dengbëjs abandoned their art and started to work at other jobs because they had to have income to make a living. Dengbëj Huseynê Farî is a perfect example of this situation. He was a notable Dengbëj in his own circle during 1970s. Then, he went to Istanbul to make studio recordings and thereby becoming famous in a broader circle. However, it did not work. New Turkish trends in the 1980s called for popular singers to perform Turkish arabesque songs not an archaic Dengbëj. Huseynê Farî left the country and moved to Germany as a worker. However, he came back, probably because he did not find what he had hoped for there. Finally, at the end of his life, in the early 1990s, he distributed his own cassettes to his audiences to make income to survive.

Most of the Dengbëjs from this generation, who were the last generation to represent Dengbëji in its traditional form, left their art and undertook other jobs to survive. However, after the year 2000, when Dengbëji regained its popularity and the local Kurdish authorities began to support existing cultural centers and the opening of new centers for Dengbëjs, such as Mala Dengbêjan, some of the surviving elderly Dengbëjs started to perform in these art centers.

---

159 We may remember that […] in many cases the natural milieu of such performances was the traditional life of small communities. See; Kreyenbroek, Philip G., Folk Poetry, www.iranicaonline.org/articles/folk-poetry, accessed 13th March 2018.

160 On 12th September 1980, a military coup occurred in Turkey. The constitutional rights were suspended, thousands of people were killed and tens of thousands were arrested. Then, another Constitution was accepted under the dominating rules of the military junta. Despite having some changes in the following decades this Constitution is still ruling the country.
However, if one were to ask the dengbêjs who are currently performing their art in such venues, why they disappeared during 1980s and 1990s, they would reply that it was due to political oppression. In fact, as far as one can tell, political oppression had less impact than the economic changes, urbanization and technological developments did, but for them it is easier to explain the situation in this way. It can be argued that admitting that they left the art because of economic problems might look cheap, while explaining it with political oppression offers an acceptable justification. Of course, during the supreme oppression of the 1990s, some dengbêjs, like thousands of other Kurdish people, faced persecution, but it was usually related to their political activities, not their art.

In fact, the political oppression of Kurdish people was not less in the 1960s and 1970s, but dengbêjî was going on regardless. Nobody left their art because the time was still favorable to the tradition. Contrary to common belief, people were much more afraid to talk about Kurdish issue in the 1960s and 1970s than in the 1980s and 1990s. Ahmed Aras describes what he had witnessed during his research in the villages of Xinûs, Qereyazî, Agirî and Mûş in the 1960s:

“Dengbêjs were telling their kilam in public but when I tried to write down what they said, they refused to let me. Even more, I went to Cemalverdî village to interview Bedîhê Cemalverdî (age, 92), one of the şagîrts (disciples) of Evdalê Zeynikê and told him that I was doing research about Evdalê Zeynikê, he even denied that he knew Evdalê Zeynikê! I had the same experience while meeting Siloyê Gulê in the village of Dignûg when I wanted to write down his memories of Evdalê Zeynikê. Siloyê Gulê knew Evdalê Zeynikê very well. Both persistently refused to talk to me about him.”

Nonetheless, despite people being afraid of the government, the tradition was going on in the traditional society in 1960s and 1970s. Namely, people were practicing it in daily life but afraid of write or read about it. However, this changed in the 1980s as it was stated above.

Essentially, beyond the three reasons which are summarized above, like other similar oral traditions, dengbêjî in its traditional form had reached the logical end of its life cycle by the 1980s. Assuming that there had been no political oppression on the Kurdish people, social and technological changes would have brought an end to the age of traditional dengbêjî and forced it to disappear or maybe reappear in a new format.

This process is observed in the Anatolian Ashîk and Iranian Naqqâlî traditions as well. A comparison among these traditions will give a deeper insight.

161 See; interview with Ahmed Aras, Dünya TV, Rû Bi Rû, by Nevzat Keskin, 6th December 2013.
The ashiks of Anatolia are like the Troubadours (old Occitan lyric poets) of the 12-14th centuries in Europe. During the 16th, 17th, and 18th centuries many famous ashiks, such as Pir Sultan Abdal, Köroğlu, Karacaoğlan, and Gevheri lived and performed their arts. Dadaloğlu was one of the last foremost ashiks who lived in the 19th Century. After his time, a decline is observed in this tradition. Köprülü argues that the traditional form of this art disappeared in the late 19th Century. Nevertheless, the tradition was still alive in the 20th Century as we know that the last famous traditional ashik, Veysel Şatıroğlu, died in 1973.

In the first half of the 20th Century the decline of this tradition went deeper. The newly built Turkish Republic was interested in western arts rather than local Turkish arts. This caused the decline to go faster. In the second half of the century, especially during the 1970s, the tradition was reshaped to function within the political atmosphere. Almost all, especially the left wing, political groups had their own ashik/s that performed to pursue their political aims. This form of ashik poetry served as a kind of survival attitude before the end of the era. After this last generation, production of new poems and songs (türkü) ended. Since the late 1970s, there have been no new notable productions from ashiks. All that occurred is the repetition of the old productions.

Particularly, in the 1980s, the ashik tradition was still alive around Kars-Ardahan, and it had been a topic of TV programs and studies. Erdener spent a year in the field, and recorded ashik performances mainly at Kars Çobanoğlu Aşıklar Kahvehanesi. However, despite festivals held by local authorities and the support of the Turkish government, the tradition diminished in this last local stronghold.

Another oral tradition that can be compared with dengêjî is naqqâli which is an old oral tradition in Iran and is also the source of the stories in Shāhnāmeh. Before being written down by Iranian poet Abūl-Qāsem-e Ferdowsi (935 CE- 1020 CE), the stories of Shāhnāmeh were performed orally. This tradition was called naqqāli, and the performers of this genre

---

162 There were also ashiks in Azerbaijan, Georgia, Armenia, and Iran but only the Anatolian ashik tradition is analyzed in this study.


164 The foremost Ashik of 20th Century Ashik Veysel (Şatıroğlu) had been faced many difficulties to go to Ankara, and to wander in the city since he was a peasant, and a kind of unwanted person in the capital city because of his traditional clothes. Even, after his poem for Mustafa Kemal, the founder of the new republic was published on the newspapers, he was not admitted to the presence of Mustafa Kemal. See; https://aregem.ktb.gov.tr/tr-12798/asik-veysel-satiroglu-18941973.html (Accessed on 28th February 2021)


166 Shāhnāmeh (The Book of Kings) was written by Ferdowsi in a poetic-couplet form between 977 and 1010 and, it consists of epic stories from creation of the world until the Islamic period of Persia in the 7th Century.
were known as *naqqāl* since the 16th century. The word *naqqāli* comes from the Arabic root *nql* (نقل) meaning to convey. So, a *naqqāl* is the conveyor of old stories.

The narratives of *naqqāls* were not limited to the stories of *Shāhnāmeh*. Although the majority of the *naqqāli* repertoire corresponded to the narratives of the *Shāhnāmeh*, there were some religious stories as well. For several centuries these stories were circulated orally. Even after being written down, the old epic Iranian stories were circulated among people via *naqqāls*. However, after the 1950s, due to changing social structure in Iran and following technological developments, the decline of *naqqāli* started. In the politicized years of 1970s, *naqqāli* became an archaic tradition in the eyes of many people, eventually becoming disregarded entirely. After the Islamic Revolution of 1979, the fact that *naqqāli* was felt to glorify the pre-Islamic era caused the Islamic regime to ban the practice. However, after a few years it was considered as a part of Iranian culture and legalized again. Nonetheless, it never won back its earlier popularity. Today, *naqqāli* is performed only in certain art centres and tourist areas. If one travels to, for example, the Azeri Tea House or the Ferdowsi Cultural Centre in Tehran they can watch *naqqāli* performances. However, it is not popular among local people. Unfortunately, many young Iranians haven’t even heard of it.

As we see from the examples of the *ashik* and *naqqāli* traditions in Anatolia and Iran, these traditions emerged as a part of rural life and originated in the oral culture of that life. Then, due to urbanization, changing social and economic conditions, along with technological developments, they lost their popularity.

In *dengbêjî*, as was mentioned in the previous pages, it is exceedingly difficult to date the beginning of the period, but the end of the era is more obvious. I would argue that it already ended in the late 20th century, particularly in the early 1980s. In the early 2000s, as we saw earlier in Literature Review, *dengbêjî* gained popularity but it is not the same tradition as before because it has transformed to a new format. The new form of *dengbêjî* stands out with two points: first, the content is simply repetition of old narratives. Although the narratives are still oral, and not read from a text, there are no successful, newly created kilams. Second, the performance, from acting to clothing, is more significant than the content of the narratives. *Dengbêjs* are not only performing their kilams, but also becoming a focal point of the performance by themselves by wearing traditional clothes and displaying artistic attitudes. Thus, it can be argued that after the year 2000 it has become a kind of performance art. However, since this dissertation particularly focuses on the kilam and the content of the narratives, which is directly connected to the traditional form of *dengbêjî*, the new format of *dengbêjî* which dates after 2000 lies beyond the scope of this study.
The next chapter will analyze this memory based on specific narratives about the fighters in the Agirî resistance which occurred in 1926-1930. The narratives regarding this resistance will be examined, and then, compared with written sources.
4 CHAPTER III: The Ağrı Resistance

4.1 The Ağrı Resistance as a Case Study

While looking at history we tend to understand and describe the past from our perception of today. In the Kurdish case, it can be argued that existing written sources also support this view. In this sense, we may assess alternative ways such as oral traditions and oral history to gain a more realistic insight in certain cases. Clearly, a society which doesn’t have a strong written history - but preserves its past through collective memory - requires a study of its oral traditions. This section of the dissertation will attempt to analyze the near past of Kurmanj people in the Serhed region via kilams.

The chapter will analyze the society's collective memory regarding the Ağrı Resistance through specific kilams that are compared with the evidence of written accounts. The main goal of the chapter is to analyze how the Kurmanj people have remembered the resistance and the fighters through kilams, and how this collective memory differs from the versions of the Turkish and Kurdish written sources.

To achieve this, it is crucial to find out how this memory describes the resistance and its fighters, since these have been described as "banditry" and "bandits" by the Turkish establishment, and as a “national revolt” and “national heroes” by the Kurdish side.

Correspondingly, three kilams concerning known fighters in the Ağrı resistance will be analyzed to understand the difference between the working of collective memory, as opposed to those found in written accounts.

To compare with kilams, the Turkish official accounts -which are the published military reports of the Turkish General Staff regarding the Ağrı resistance - will first be reviewed. Then, for the Kurdish accounts, two main sources, the book of Garo Sasuni which was written during the period of the resistance, and the memoirs of Ihsan Nuri, who was a firsthand witness of the resistance, will be analyzed. As will be shown below, these two books, especially that of Sasuni, have been the source of most of the written Kurdish accounts.

The semi-official Turkish newspaper of that time, Cumhuriyet, is another source relevant for both Turkish and Kurdish written accounts, which are informed by their nationalist

---

167 I should note that all Turkish official accounts use the word “ Ağrı” to describe the resistance but its original name in Kurdish is Agirî. To be consistent in the names, the Kurdish version, namely, the Ağrı, is used in the entire of this dissertation. In some cases, its Armenian name, Ararat, is also used. It is written as Ağrı only when it is cited from the Turkish official accounts.
approaches. All issues of this newspaper that report on the resistance are examined as secondary sources in this study.168

Although the words resistance and revolt are used interchangeably, in this study the movement around Agirî has usually been described as resistance. Since all the Kurdish uprisings, even mere objections were considered as revolts by the Turkish government and brutally suppressed, in this study the Agirî movement is described as resistance. In this sense, the difference between a revolt and resistance can be summarized as follows: a revolt is an uprising against an ongoing process or institution. On the other hand, a resistance is simply an expression of people’s objection to new policies, applications, military operations, occupation etc.

Kurdish acts of resistance and rebellions with different shapes and aims occurred during the late Ottoman period starting from the early 19th century, rising, and declining in diverse regions and periods. They continued during the Turkish Republican period.

The first post-Ottoman Kurdish insurgency was held by the Milan tribe around Ruha (Urfa) in 1920, and it was followed by the Qoçgîrî (Koçgiri) rebellion between Sivas and Erzincan in 1921. However, these uprisings were small and local. The biggest one would happen in 1925 and it was named the Sheikh Said (Kurdish; Şêx Seîd) revolt as the religious leader Sheikh Said was in charge. In the time between this revolt and the Dêrsim resistance (1938) several local Kurdish insurgencies and acts of resistance occurred, but they were usually limited to one or two tribes or families, or a few tribes in a small area.

168 Regarding the military operation in Agirî, I reviewed all issues of the Cumhuriyet Newspaper from May to end of September 1930. As it is analyzed, the newspaper was used as a propaganda machine by the Turkish government to put pressure on foreign governments. For example, although the military operations were going on in the Agirî region since several weeks, the newspaper did not mention them. Instead, during May 1930 we read a lot about the left properties of Greek people who have been exiled in 1922. Since the Turkish and Greek government were having discussion about these properties, the Cumhuriyet Newspaper was publishing news and critics regarding this topic to put pressure on the Greek government, and to agitate the Turkish people. Whenever the Turkish and Greek governments reached an agreement about the properties, the newspaper just closed that page, and did not give news anymore. It was done. Instead, in synonym with the priorities of the government, whenever the Turkish government wanted to put pressure on Iran, the newspaper started to publish news and comments about the Agirî resistance, in July and August 1930. The main parts of the news and comments were about the role of Iran in the revolt. For several days, the headline was full of news regarding the Agîrî revolt and the role of Iran in this case. Iran was blamed for backing the rebels. However, whenever Iran accepted to go alongside with the Turkish government, the news regarding the resistance and role of Iran to back up the rebels dramatically dropped. The last news we read is about the Turkish-Iran border revision commission on 14th August. After 15th August, again in synonym with the priorities of the government, the Newspaper is full of news about the Serbest Firka (an opposite Turkish political party of that time). Despite having the ultimate military operation in September, we read the only news on 27th August, on the third page -not on the headline-, which indicates that the Turkish troops are marching up to the hill on the Mount Agirî. Finally, on 15th September, the newspaper informs that the military operation is successfully ended. It is very interesting to see there is almost no news regarding the ongoing operations between 15th August and 15th September 1930 although the last military operation was held between 7th-14th September 1930. All mentioned sources (the numbers of the Cumhuriyet Newspaper regarding the Agirî resistance) will be found in the Appendices of the dissertation on figures numbered as 1-15.
This map published by the Turkish General Staff in 1946 to show the past riots in the East of Turkey after establishment of the Turkish Republic in 1923. The Agirî revolt took place in the far eastern side, just on the border between Turkey and Iran. As we see on this map the Turkish General Staff does not regard the Zîlan (Zeylan) revolt as a part of the Agirî (Agri) Revolt. It is listed separately.

The Agirî resistance took place in different forms and various levels of intensity in the Serhed region, in the east of Turkey, close to the borders with Iran and Armenia, between 1926 and 1930. Some people in the resistance and the clashes which they involved occupies a particular place in the dengbêjî tradition. There are several kilams about the fighters in the Agirî Resistance. Most of them narrate conflicts between the Kurdish members of the resistance and the Turkish army, whilst a few narrate clashes between the Kurdish fighters

---

and the Iranian army. There are also a few kilams about infighting and conflict amongst the Kurdish fighters.

The clashes between 1926 and 1930 that happened around Ağırî are a remarkable topic, both on account of the Turkish and Kurdish nationalist discourses. These two discourses affect each other since they are based on the same main sources, namely, the military reports of the Turkish General Staff regarding the Ağırî revolt, and the books written by Garo Sasuni and İhsan Nuri Pasha. The supplementary source for both sides was Cumhuriyet.

In this chapter, these two opposing narratives will be studied. Then, they will be compared with oral accounts, namely, kilams about the resistance and fighters. In the first section of this chapter, as the main source of the Turkish nationalist discourse, the Turkish official documents regarding the Ağırî resistance will be reviewed. This part will be mainly based on the published military reports of the Turkish General Staff.

Then, in the second section, the Kurdish nationalist discourse will be analyzed based on two books which were written by firsthand witnesses of the resistance. They are the memoirs of İhsan Nuri Pasha, as the known military leader of the resistance; and the book of Garo Sasuni who was in touch with Xoybûn.¹⁷⁰ These two books have inspired many of the later Kurdish written accounts. It can be argued that the Kurdish nationalist discourse about the Ağırî resistance is mainly based on stories from these two sources mentioned above.

The third section will analyze three kilams about some of the foremost fighters in the resistance, to understand how they have been remembered by the Kurdish-Kurmanj people, and how this memory differs from the written accounts.

To understand the status, values, and motivation of the Kurmanj tribes fighting against the Russian army during the 1st World War, two more kilams will be analyzed at the end of the chapter. This will contribute to our understanding of their attitude during the resistance in Ağırî between 1926-1930.

In this sequence of the study some repetition will be inevitable. Since the same incidents will be reviewed from three different aspects it is possible to find the same events more than once. Therefore, to protect the unity of each section, some repetition is imperative.

Before starting the examination of Turkish and Kurdish accounts we may summarize the resistance in Ağırî to become familiar with the topic.

---

¹⁷⁰ Xoybûn was a small organization built by exiled people in the French controlled Syria. The organization will be examined further in the section titled as “Xoybûn” in the next pages.
4.2 A Summary of the Agirî Resistance

The signs which may be deemed as the beginning of the Agirî Resistance started in May 1926, as clashes between the Kurdish fugitive tribesmen and the military forces of the Turkish government. The official reason given for these clashes was banditry, but the true reason was the exile policy of the government. The Turkish government wanted to displace and exile Kurdish chieftains and their families after defeating the Sheikh Said revolt, which would cause Kurdish families within inner Anatolia to lose all contact with their communities in Kurdistan.\(^{171}\) Therefore, the movement started simply as resistance to being exiled. Most of the people who formed part of the resistance were either exiled or to be exiled. As we will see in this chapter, there was no clear and common aim among the members of the resistance.

In 1926, some people had already escaped to Mount Agirî, having refused to be exiled, therefore, becoming a security threat for the government. There were also people in the region who were wanted by the government in relation to their personal crimes, such as blood feuds etc. The last group of fugitives consisted of the remaining people from the Sheikh Said revolt. These different groups of people started to act together around Mount Agirî, in 1926. However, they were identified as bandits by the Turkish authorities, and the military operations aimed to defeat them.

In fact, some of the rebels who met on Mount Agirî had collaborated with the Turkish government against the rebels during the Sheikh Said revolt in 1925.\(^{172}\) Nonetheless, they were considered a potential risk by the government, and they were forced to go into exile. On the other hand, many were already fugitives wanted by the government, who were hunted even more energetically because of their involvement in the Sheikh Said revolt.\(^{173}\) Those who had remained neutral during the revolt were also exiled.\(^{174}\)

The first attempt of the Turkish military to defeat the rebels failed, causing the Turkish troops to retreat to the district of Bazîd (Turk: Doğu Beyazıt; a town which is close to the

\(^{171}\) After defeating the Sheikh Said revolt in 1925, the Turkish government had decided to exile the Kurdish notables from their homeland to the western part of Turkey. The decision was applied in the beginning of 1926 and included not only the supporters of the revolt but also the bystanders and some of the allies of the Turkish government.

\(^{172}\) Such as Biro Heskî Têllî who would become one of the foremost names of the Agirî resistance. Further knowledge about him will be given in the next pages of this study.

\(^{173}\) Such as Ferzende Beg who had joined the Sheikh Said revolt and wanted by the Turkish government. A kilam about Ferzende Beg will be analyzed in this chapter.

\(^{174}\) The Sipkan tribe, which Xalis Beg was a member of it, was in a neutral position in the Sheikh Said revolt. A kilam about Xalis Beg will be examined in this chapter.
Agirî mountain) to prepare for a new military operation in May 1926. In the following June the Turkish military started their new operation causing the fighters to escape to Iran. Thus, the operation ended without any major clashes.

Ihsan Nuri Pasha\textsuperscript{175} was a Kurdish military captain in the Ottoman and the Turkish army. Since he was suspected of anti-government activities, he left his post in 1924 and escaped. He settled in Iraqi Kurdistan for a while, and then came back to the Serhed region, and joined the escapees on Mount Agirî during the spring of 1927.

In the Autumn of 1927, he was the appointed head commander of the Kurdish Forces in Agirî by the newly established Kurdish political organization named as Xoybûn, in Syria.

The second phase of the Turkish military operation to defeat the resisters in Agirî took place during September 1927. The Turkish troops moved to the Iranian border but were unable to pass to the other side where the resisters escaped. Thus, the Turks put diplomatic pressure on Iran to change the border in favor of themselves. But at the same time, they were preparing an Amnesty Law\textsuperscript{176} to weakening the armed groups and to calm down anger among Kurdish tribes on the one hand, and organizing new security services, including spying activities around Mount Agirî on the other.

Xoybûn announced the establishment of the “Agirî Kurdish Republic” in 1928.\textsuperscript{177} Soon, it began releasing booklets and bulletins to convince other Kurdish tribal leaders within the borders of Turkey to support the resistance in Agirî.\textsuperscript{178}

Meanwhile, the Turkish government, which was indirectly in touch with some of the tribal leaders, tried to convince them to put down their arms and surrender to the Turkish army when an Amnesty Law came into being.\textsuperscript{179} The government sent unofficial letters to

\textsuperscript{175} Ihsan Nuri was a military captain in the Ottoman Army, then the Turkish Army until 1924. Being a member of the Kurdish Cibiran tribe and involving in the organization of the Sheikh Said Revolt, he escaped from the military on 4th September 1924 with some other Kurdish lieutenants Hurşit, Rasim, Tevfik and Ali Rıza before starting the revolt. See; Olson, Robert, \textit{Kurdish Nationalism and Sheikhs’ Rebellion}, University of Texas Press, Austin, 1989, p.172.

\textsuperscript{176} On 7\textsuperscript{th} May 1928, numbered as 1239, a specific Amnesty Law was accepted by the Turkish Parliament. This Amnesty was including the armed Kurdish groups around Agirî, the exiled people, and escapes. The Law had two main aims: To calm down the Kurdish communities who were disappointed because of the previous exile policy, and to convince people to lay down their arms, therefore, weakening the resistance around Agirî.


\textsuperscript{178} However, since Xoybûn was not a strong political entity, their attempts to unify the Kurds failed. The reason of the weakness of Xoybûn will be examined in the next pages of this chapter.

\textsuperscript{179} Xoybûn never succeed in this aim. The armed tribesmen never became more than a couple of thousands between 1926–1930, and they were belonging to different groups with different priorities. Thus, if you compare it with the previous Sheikh Said riot, the Agirî resistance was very small and local.
escaped tribal leaders to assure them that they would not be jailed because of the new Amnesty Law. In this way, many people who had been on the mountain surrendered to the government forces.

In September 1929, the Turkish military held an operation around the Tendurek Mountain, before starting the major military operation on Mount Agirî. Following this step, they ordered new troops to move on Agirî Mountain, which was the main military base of the fighters, to crush the resistance.

Before the planned military operation on Mt. Agirî, the Turkish army began another operation near the Zîlan (Zeylan, in Turkish) region in June-July 1930, because just before the military operation on Agirî, the Kurdish fighters who mainly belonged to the Heyderan tribes, attacked, and took control on the town of Bazîd and then, marched through neighboring towns to spread the revolt in the area. The reaction of the Turkish military to this insurgency was harsh. As the bloodiest phase of the operations around Mount Agirî between 1926-1930, the Turkish army and their mercenaries killed thousands of civilians with bombardments and other military operations in the villages of Zîlan.

In a last attempt to support the resistance in Agirî, a few hundreds of Kurdish fighters from Iraqi Kurdistan attacked the town of Oremar (Daglica, in Turkish) in July 1930. However, they were repelled after a few days by the Turkish troops and Kurdish militias who were fighting for the Turks. Thus, the Agirî resistance was isolated and besieged on Mount Agirî in the beginning of August 1930.

The ultimate phase of the Turkish military operation to defeat the Agirî Resistance took place between the 7th and 14th September 1930. The operation took one week and ended with the defeat of the resistance. The Turkish General Staff announced their victory in the last Agirî military operation on 14th September 1930. 180 These military operations will be examined more detailed in the next pages.

To understand the location of the resistance better, sharing a photo from the location to introduce the area in the beginning will be helpful:

\[180\] Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyanları-I; Kaynak Yayınları, İstanbul, 2012, p. 542
This is the view of Mount Agirî from space taken from Google Earth. Approximately, the land on the right-downside of the mountain is in Iran, while the other side, including the western cone, is in Turkey. As it is seen the Mountain consists of two cones which are called “Big Agirî” (on the uppers side of the photo, on this picture white on top because of snow) and “Small Agirî” (on the downside of the photo). Until 1930, Small Agirî belonged to Iran. However, after a border revision between Turkey and Iran, this part passed to Turkey whilst the Kotur area, which had arable land, was given to Iran. This border revision blocked the way for the rebels to pass to Iran whenever they were threatened by the Turkish military.

---

181 Source: https://www.google.com/maps/@39.6966091,44.3730556,22237m/data=!3m1!1e3

4.2.1 The Agirî Resistance as Seen Through the Turkish Official Accounts

In this section of the chapter, the events are presented as found in the published military reports of the Turkish General Staff. The way the cases are described reflects the Turkish point of view. The names of people, tribes, and geography are used as they are written on the military reports. These reports are primary sources for Turkish popular and scholarly works. Criticism of, and comments on this approach are mainly relegated to footnotes, but sometimes occur in the text.

The Turkish written accounts typically describe the Agirî resistance as a banditry issue, and sometimes as a semi-political case which was inspired by outsiders. Most of the scholarly works that were written from this perspective in Turkey are based on the official, released documents of the Turkish General Staff. Except for a few political critiques written by members of the left-wing opposition,183 almost all Turkish accounts of the Agirî resistance are written from the viewpoint of these official documents, either directly or indirectly.184 These documents were published as a book in 1969 and re-published in 1992.185

As was said earlier, according to the official documents of the Turkish side, the clashes and military operations mainly happened because of banditry. Thus, the fighters were essentially depicted as thugs and bandits. The Turkish General Staff did not qualify the movements as a political cause until 1930.186 In the scenario which the Turkish government promoted, all people were happy to live under the new regime, and no political opposition could convince people to support them.

From this point of view, the Agirî resistance had three main causes: the desire of external forces to ruin the new Turkish Republic; the desire of local Kurdish rulers (Agha, Beg and Sheikh), who were seeking to take back their previous status; and the banditry issues in the region.

183 For example: Kivlicmli, Hikmet; İhtiyat Kuvvet: Milliyet (Şark), Yol Yay.; İstanbul, 1979; Kalman, M., Belge, Tanık ve Yaşayanlarıyla Ağrı Direnışı, Peri Yay., İstanbul, 1997.


186 As we will see on the next pages of this chapter, the Agirî resistance was never considered as directly a political issue even in 1930 by the Turkish General Staff which has inspired the Turkish nationalist discourse. On the other hand, it was totally political and national according to the Kurdish written accounts which are consisting of the Kurdish nationalist discourse.
According to this narrative, starting from 1926 escaped chieftains, bandits, thugs, and fugitives had clashes with the Turkish military forces in different regions for various reasons. After 1927, survivors of the Sheikh Said revolt (1925) joined them. Then, a political organization, like Hoybun, (Xoybûn, in Kurdish) were set up by the Armenians in Lebanon to push ethnic claims, and this organization contacted the rebels. After 1929, the revolt gained a political aspect because of the contribution from outsiders (mainly Armenians and the government of Iran, but also some actors from Western countries such as the UK). Thus, it was essentially not political but had political aspects after 1929.

The military commander of all Turkish military operations around Agirê was Salih Omurtak Pasha who was the commander of the 9th Corps. The civilian who was wholly in charge of the operation was the 1st General Inspector Mahmut Tali. The 1st General Inspector’s area included Diyarbakir Urfa, Hakkari, Bitlis, Siirt, Van, Mardin and Elaziz. (In later years the name of Elaziz changed by the Turkish authorities to be Elaziğ.)

During the military operations around Agirê, Derviş Pasha was ordered to find the escaped fighters. He became famous for his cruelty among the people. He was promoted to General (Ferik) in the army in August 1930, as a reward for his success during the military operations.

---

187 There is no single study, news outlet, or document of the Turkish side in that period which has written the name of organization correctly. Hoybun, Hoybon, Hobyan are some used names. The correct name is Xoybûn, (mostly written as Khoybun and spelling as Khoiboon) and there is no accepted orthography regarding this name since it does not have a meaning by itself in Kurdish.

188 Salih Omurtak (1889-1954). He was an army chief at the Ottoman army, and then, the Turkish army. He was promoted as ferîk (General) during the military operations which he was coordinating as the 9th Corps Commander. He became an orgeneral (four-stars general) in 1930 and served until his retirement in 1950.

189 Dr. Ibrahim Tali (Öngören) was born in Istanbul in 1875. He graduated from the medical school of military in 1893 and started to work as a medical doctor at the military hospitals. He joined to Tripoli and Balkan wars, and the First World War. When Mustafa Memal was sent to Anatolia he was with Mustafa Kemal and worked with him during the Turkish national struggle. Tali was the representative of the new Turkish Republic at the General Assembly of Peoples in Baku, 1920. After having some diplomatic post in Varsaw, he became a PM, and appointed as the First (1927-1932) and Second (1935) General Inspector in the Kurdish region. He died in 1952. According to Uğur Mumcu, Ibrahim Tali was also the one who prepared the report for Dersim military operation in 1938. See; Mumcu, Uğur; Kürt Doyası, Uğur Mumcu Vakfî Yay. Ankara, 1998 pp. 30,31.

190 The General Inspectors had almost unlimited authority in their regions. This authority included commanding all officers, like the police and military forces, and rejecting or approving the decisions of the governors. Furthermore, they were responsible only to the prime minister but practically this responsibility consisted of just sending written reports if asked by them. For detailed research about these inspectors, see; Bulut, Çağdaş Engin, The General Inspectors: Hand of the Government in Provinces, CTAD, Issue 21, Spring 2015, in Turkish, p. 83-110.

191 Derviş (Ahmet) Pasha was born in Macedonia-Vardar in 1886. He was a colonel before being sent to the Zilan military operation and became a major general during the operation in August 1930. He died in 1932.
These operations were conducted in a very brutal manner, particularly through the actions of some Kurdish and Turkman militias, and they brought dead-silence to the region. The Zeylan military operation was particularly brutal, representing the bloodiest phase of the operations.

The Turkish government was aware of the cruel acts of their military forces and mercenaries during the resistance. However, their actions were never investigated or even seriously criticized. On the official accounts, this part of the Turkish history is a bright victory of the Turkish Military.

Furthermore, a protection law for the war-crimes was accepted by the Turkish Parliament on 20th July 1931 and published on the official newspaper on 29th July 1931. According to this specific law: “The crimes that have been committed around the Ağrı region will be exempt from interrogation and punishment.”

This law not only protected the Turkish military forces but also the militias and civilians who acted on behalf of the government.

In order to achieve further insight concerning the military operations, the following section will focus on them step by step. The given details will be useful to compare with the Kurdish written accounts.

4.2.1.1 Stages of the Turkish Military Operations

According to the documents of the Turkish General Staff, the military operations on the Ağrı (Kurd: Ağrı) Mountain happened in three phases, named the First, Second and Third Ağrı Military Operations.

Despite the existence of a degree of continuity among these three phases, the Turkish military reports do not represent them as different parts of the same movement. Thus, instead of the “Ağrı Rebellion”, they speak of the “Ağrı Rebellions” which means a series of revolts around Ağrı Mountain.

Although it was held between the last two phases of the Ağrı military operations, and in the same region, the Tendürük military operation is listed separately. Its official aim was “to secure public order”, and the target was Şeyh Abdulkadir (Sheikh Evdilqadir, in Kurdish) and his tribe, the Saqan.

192 “İsyan Mıntıkasında İşlenen Ef'alin Suç Sayılmayacağına Dair Kanun”, T.C. Resmi Gazete, Sayı: 1859, 29 Temmuz 1931. The law remarks that the acts done in the region of the revolt by the Turkish military forces, or its allies are not an issue of accusation. The Turkish Official Newspaper, Volume: 1859, 29th July 1931, see; Appendices, Fig. 20.
Similarly, two other attempts to support the resistance in Ağrı, the movements at Zilan and Oremar, were also referred to as being separate from the Ağrı resistance by the Turkish authorities. These two attempts are described as help of the Ağrı rebels, to lift the pressure off them. However, while the Oremar attempt is thought to contribute to the Ağrı resistance directly, the Zilan revolt is considered as indirect support by the Turkish General Staff. As we had seen on the Turkish General staff’s map (Fig.4) to show the past Kurdish riots in the previous pages, the Zeylan revolt is listed separately. It is not considered as a part of the Ağrı resistance.

To have a clear picture of the military operations around Ağrı, a chronological table of them is presented here, based on the information of published Turkish military reports.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Operation Name</th>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Target</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>The 1st Ağrı Military Operation</td>
<td>16th May-17th July 1926</td>
<td>Mount Ağrı</td>
<td>Ağrı Rebels</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The 2nd Ağrı Military Operation</td>
<td>13-20th Sept. 1927</td>
<td>Mount Ağrı</td>
<td>Ağrı Rebels</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Tendürük Military Operation</td>
<td>14-27th September 1929</td>
<td>Mount Tendürük</td>
<td>Şeyh Abdulkadir</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Zeylan Revolt and Counterinsurgency</td>
<td>20th June-10th July 1930</td>
<td>Zeylan Valley</td>
<td>Zeylan Rebels</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Oramar Revolt and Counterinsurgency</td>
<td>16th July-10th October 1930</td>
<td>Oramar, Herki, Şemdinan, Şat</td>
<td>Oramar Rebels</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The 3rd Ağrı Military Operation</td>
<td>7-14th September 1930</td>
<td>Mount Ağrı</td>
<td>Ağrı Rebels</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table-1: List of Turkish Military Operations around Mount Ağrı

---

193 This scenario is totally controversial in the memoir of Ihsan Nuri. While he has written a lot about the Zilan revolt, there is only a few sentences about the Oremar attempt by citing it from the Cumhuriyet newspaper. Despite revealing a lot of information about the resistance in Zilan and Ağrı, only citing a short passage from the Newspaper means, he probably had no information about the Oremar attack while he was in Ağrı.

194 This table is designed by the author based on the data taken from published Turkish General Staff documents.
4.2.1.2 The First Military Operation in Ağrı: 16\textsuperscript{th} May-17\textsuperscript{th} July 1926

The first military operation to defeat the resistance around the Ağrı Mountain started on 16\textsuperscript{th} May and ended on 17\textsuperscript{th} June 1926, meaning it took more than four weeks.

The operation aimed to defeat Biro Heskî Têlli\textsuperscript{195} and his armed men on Mount Ağrı. Biro Heskî was a member of the Hessesorî tribe, and he had collaborated with the Turkish government during the Sheikh Said rebellion in 1925. Nonetheless, the government put him on the list of people to be exiled. He refused to be exiled and escaped to the Ağrı Mountain with his armed tribesmen in the beginning of 1926.

In fact, despite his escape, Biro Heskî Têlli had not become dangerous to the government yet. Furthermore, in the beginning of the military operation, the governorship of Beyazid contacted him, demanding that he surrender. According to the Turkish military reports, he had agreed to relinquish his arms upon the retreat of the troops and asked for three days to prepare for his surrender.\textsuperscript{196} However, the field military commander rejected this and started to attack later that day. Thus, the rebels fought “brutally” and routed the Turkish troops.\textsuperscript{197}

According to the papers, since the Turkish side did not consider the rebels as a serious threat, the military operation had been careless, e.g., by not moving secretly, not being well organized etc. So, the operation failed. The Turkish troops lost several members and ammunition.

Consequently, the field military commander was immediately fired from his post and sent to the military court to be tried for violating the agreement for surrendering and causing the failure of the operation.

The second phase of this operation was held in June 1926. The number of rebels was approximately 1150 and they consisted of five groups in different locations. The Turkish troops were at least five times as numerous as the rebels. They started to move on 16\textsuperscript{th} June, 1926.

\textsuperscript{195} His whole name is BREHIME HUSIKÊ TÊLLI. More information about him will be given in the next pages.

\textsuperscript{196} Contrary to the Turkish General Staff documents, the Kurdish written accounts usually do not mention any negotiation for surrendering between Biro Heskî Têlli and the Turkish authorities before or after the clashes in 1926. On the other hand, K. Süphandagh confirms that there was a request to surrender but Biro rejected to surrender to the Turkish army. See; IMC TV, DİROYK, Part: 38. However, Biro Heskî’s son, Abdullah Çoktin, reveals that his father was intended to surrender but after one of the Geloî tribe man blamed him for being a funk and precarious man, he changed his mind, and continued to fight. See; Hun Mücahit Özden, IĞDIR VE Ağrı Dağı İSYANI, Alter Yay., Ankara, 2019, p.100.

\textsuperscript{197} Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyanları-1, Kaynak Yayınları, İstanbul, 2012, p. 265.
As we read on the Turkish military reports, there were some minor clashes between the Turkish troops and rebels and most of the rebels escaped to Iran. Accordingly, the Turkish military had successfully ended the operation on 17th June, 1926. The ammunition that had been seized by the rebels from the Turkish troops was also recaptured.198

4.2.1.3 The second military operation in Ağrı: 13th-20th September 1927

The second military operation on Ağrı started on 13th September 1927, more than one year after the first. It ended one week later. The official aim of the operation was cleansing the region and ending all banditry issues. According to the documents of Turkish General Staff the Turks were not challenged in the field during the operation. In these reports, for example, the term "escaping rebels" is used repeatedly:

“As we know, the rebels have gone to Demirkapı and they are trying to escape with their flocks. To prevent them to escape and to wipe them out […].

[…] (the rebels) removed their tents in the north of Şihli and they are escaping in the direction of İnek Valley.

[…] the crowds of rebels were running through Kozlu road to the East.

[…] in fact, the rebel crowds were trying to escape to Iran.”199

Throughout the Turkish military reports regarding this operation, it appears as if there was no organized rebellion against the government. And, except for the sudden attack on the 29th Regiment on 16th of September, there were no serious clashes between the Turkish army and the resisters. In this surprise attack the 29th Regiment lost all their horses, five machine guns, and five army officers were caught by the rebels.

So, what is understood from the Turkish official reports is that the military operation was not started to defeat an actual revolt. It seems that the essential plan was to punish and remove tribes that were not complying with the government.

198 In this report, the estimated numbers of the rebels are too high. The local military officers had exaggerated the situation, or they were misinformed by their sources because the same report indicates that during the operation the Turkish forces never had seen an armed Kurdish group bigger than 50 men. See; Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyânlari-I, Kaynak Yayınları, 2012, İstanbul, p. 267.

199 As it is seen in this report, the people who are trying to escape along their flocks are civilians. The rebels did not raise flocks. So, the estimated number of the rebels which was given as 1150 may include these civilians who were living on the mountain and raising their flocks. See; Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyânlari-I, Kaynak Yayınları-I, 2012, İstanbul, pp. 336-339.
4.2.1.4 The Tendürük Military Operation: 14th-27th September 1929

The Tendürük (Tendurek, in Kurdish) military operation directly targeted the Saqan tribe led by Şeyh Abdulkadir, (Sheikh Evdilqadir, in Kurdish). The official reason for the operation was to disarm and punish the “unfaithful” Sheikh Evdilqadir and his tribe.

The government suspected Sheikh Evdilqadir of supporting the rebels. He had escaped from exile in 1927 and joined the rebels in Agirî, but then, when the Amnesty Law came into force in 1928, he left the resistance to benefit from the amnesty. His family was brought back from exile by the government, and he settled in Ortilî (Turk: Örtülü) with his tribe. After that he tried to stay neutral in the conflict between the rebels and government. However, his tribe had troubles with the Qotan and Keskoî tribes who sided with the government. Understandably, the chieftains of these two tribes urged the local Turkish authorities to harass Sheikh Evdilqadir, and to disarm his tribesmen.

In fact, upon the tension between Sheikh Evdilqadir and other tribes, the General Inspector intended to exile Sheikh Evdilqadir and his tribe to Erzincan but since they would probably not be “loyal” to the government, it was felt better to punish them with a military operation.

During the Tendürük military operation no direct clash occurred between the Turkish army and Sheikh Evdilqadir’s tribesmen. Exceptionally, small clashes between the Sheikh Evdilqadir’s tribesmen and those of the Keskoî and Qotan tribesmen, who were backed by the government, took place prior to the military operation. Since the Keskoî and Qotan tribesmen could not attack without the consent of the Turkish government, those clashes warned Sheikh Evdilqadir that there was no peace for him anymore. Their attack meant that the Turkish government decided to wipe him out from the region. Hence, upon starting the military operation, he immediately crossed the border and passed to the Iranian territory to save his tribe. While escaping to Iran, Turkish warplanes bombed them and killed a few people from his tribe. He then returned to Mount Agirî to settle in the rebel-controlled area.

This operation is not considered a part of the Agirî revolt by the Turkish General Staff. Instead, as was noted earlier, since the target was not the Agirî rebels but Sheikh Evdilqadir, they regarded it as a “cleansing” movement before the start of the main operation on the

---

200 As we will see in the next pages of this study, it was quite common to see that tribes and families were siding with the government or rebels according to their traditional rivals. Since their traditional rival Sheikh Evdilqadir was close to the rebels, Qotan and Keskoî tribes had sided with the government.

rebels. Immediately after this operation they focused on Mount Agirî, which was the last area that was not under their control.

Although it was not considered to be a part of the Ağrı Military Operation by the Turkish General Staff, the Tendürük military operation had two main results which affected the resistance:

a. The essential reason to hold the operation was to displace the Saqan tribe led by Sheikh Evdîlqadir and to isolate the rebels on Mount Agirî. Thereby the government gained power by controlling an extended area.

b. The operation led Sheikh Evdîlqadir to re-join the resistance. To have the support of such an important figure, who was both a sheikh and a tribe leader, was a gain for the resistance but it also triggered tribal conflicts.

4.2.1.5 Zeylan Revolt and Counterinsurgency: 20th June-10th July 1930

On the 19th and 20th June of 1930, while the Turkish army was preparing for the last military operation in Ağrı, a group of rebels marched on the town of Zeylan, took it under their control, and defeated the Turkish Gendarme base of the town.

The defeat of the 5th Gendarme Legion was not only crushing but also shameful for the Turkish army since most of the soldiers chose to surrender to the rebels to prevent being killed. As a result of this attack, 2 army officers and 16 soldiers were killed; 2 officers and 2 soldiers were injured; 150 soldiers were lost or caught, 81 horses disappeared, 2 heavy machine guns, 11 light machine guns, and 144 guns were seized by the rebels. Furthermore, the attitude of the legion (in surrendering to the rebels) had encouraged the civilian people to side with the rebels, according to the military reports.202

After taking over the town of Zeylan, the rebels attacked Erciş, took partial control of the town and challenged the military and militia.

Ten days later, on 29th June 1930, another group of rebels attacked the Sürbehan (Suphan) and Norşin military bases.203 In these attacks the result was same; after a short time, the soldiers gave up and surrendered themselves to the rebels. Additionally, all the ammunition was seized.

---


203 In his memoir, Ihsan Nuri claims that they had organized the Norşin and Suphan (Sürbehan, in the Turkish military reports) attacks when they heard that the Heyderan tribes have started the riot in Zîlan. See; Paşa, Ihsan Nuri, Ağrı Dağı İsyani, Med Yayınları, Istanbul,1996, p. 88.
As one may imagine, this situation worried the Turkish General Staff, and they immediately sent an order to the legions. This order stressed that these attitudes contributed to the rebel propaganda, which claimed the surrendered soldiers would not be killed. Thus, “[…] the goal of every Turkish soldier should be to fight the bandits relentlessly until their last breath”\textsuperscript{204} was written on the order.

While the rebels in Zeylan were trying to advance on the ground, the Turkish military prepared for the last phase of its military operation to defeat the entire resistance in the region.

In military reports, the situation of the rebels is described as below:

“To the north of Lake Van, the situation of bandits around Patnos: the bandits consist of 350-400 men and are led by Körhüseyin Pashaoğulları and Emin Pashaoğulları.\textsuperscript{205} They are based in Sofu Mustafa, Kâni, Yukarı Romik, Çakurbey, Gürgüre, Haçlı, Koru, Harabe, Kürk and Çavuş villages. All these villages and the neighboring villages have joined the bandits.

In the Zeylan area, led by Seyid Resul, the number of the bandits are thought to be 400 men, who are based in Şurk, SuSoğuk, Kadir Asker, Münevver, Sivik, Ağı, Dedeli and Şeytan Ava villages in the valley. All the neighboring villages have joined the bandits.

In Çaldıran, led by Yusuf Abdal,\textsuperscript{206} a group of bandits have crossed the Iranian border and took base around Aşağı Çilli, Şeyh Rumi, Alikelle, Haçan, Kaçmaz and Şeyh Sucu villages. The number of these bandits is unknown. In the north of this area, Halikanlı Halit and Melikanlı Tozu\textsuperscript{207} (with their tribesmen) are located. Highly probably, these bandits have crossed the border to support and protect the bandits of Zeylan and Patnos.”\textsuperscript{208}

\textsuperscript{204} Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyanları-I, Kaynak Yayınları, İstanbul, 2012, p. 480.

\textsuperscript{205} Kor Huseyin Pasha and Emîn Pasha were commanders of Hamidiye Regiments during the late Ottoman period. Kor Huseyin Pasha was leading 4 regiments. Each regiment was consisting of approximately 500 armed men. See: Kemal Sühändag, IMC TV, Dîrok, Part: 37. The mentioned sons of Kor Huseyin Pasha were Nadir and Mehemed and the sons of Emîn Pasha were Umer, Usman, Evdillah and Bûrhan.

\textsuperscript{206} Üsîvé Evdal (Yusuf Abdal) was married with the daughter of Kor Huseyin Pasha, and he was a strong chieftain in Iran. During the Zilan revolt he crossed the border with his armed men, and fought together with his brothers in law, namely, Nadir and Mehemed. After defeating the Agirî resistance, upon the request of Turkish government, Üsîvé Evdal and the younger brother of Emîn Pasha, Eli, were jailed in Iran. Both died or were killed there. See; Sühändag, Kemal; Osmanlı Arşiv Belgelerinde Heyderan Aşireti ve Ağrı Direnişi, Pel Yay., İstanbul, 2021, p. 84.

\textsuperscript{207} All the names listed here are taken same as they are written on the Turkish General Staff’s reports. And all of them are either written wrong, or not used by the locals. Halikan is Xelikan. And the person who is named as Melikanlı Tozu is probably Tozo, the head of a family known as Mala Tozo.

\textsuperscript{208} Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyanları-I, Kaynak Yayınları, 2012, İstanbul, pp. 461-462. As is seen on the military documents, civilian people joined the revolt in Zilan because the leadership of this attempt was mainly in the hands of the sons of Kor Huseyin Pasha and Emîn Pasha who had a big tribal support. The Zilan attempt had also some important local leaders such as Seyid Resûl and Sheikh Zahir. The other attempt which civilian people joined was Oremar revolt. The General Staff does not mention any other movement which civilians joined during the Agirî resistance from 1926 to 1930.
The Turkish military planned to start an operation to defeat the resistance in Zeylan on 4th July 1930. According to this plan all the villages that had participated in the rebellion would be burnt down.\textsuperscript{209}

On the day the military operation began, the rebels launched attacks on several military bases such as Bulakbasti, Karaburun, Taşburun and Kayaburun. According to the military reports, the three leaders of the Ağrı resistance, İhsan Nuri, Biro Heski Telli and Sheikh Evdilqadir joined those attacks with their all-armed men.\textsuperscript{210}

After the military operation started and the rebellious areas were bombed by warplanes,\textsuperscript{211} the situation on the battlefield changed and the resistance in Zeylan started to lose ground. On 21\textsuperscript{st} July, the military reports claim that after the movement of the 9\textsuperscript{th} Army Corps, the local leaders of the resistance Körhüseyin Pashaoğulları (the sons of Kor Huseyn Pasha) and Seyit Resul took refuge with the Halikanli tribe and headed to Maku (in Iran). The Halikanli tribe lost 25 members. As noted by the government, the Belikanli tribe,\textsuperscript{212} which supported the rebels, gave up and was ready to be settled anywhere under the Turkish rules.

The Zeylan military operation by the 7\textsuperscript{th} and 9\textsuperscript{th} Army Corps continued until September of 1930. According to the Turkish military reports, a few thousands of the “bandits” were killed while several escaped to Iran.

---


\textsuperscript{210} Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyanları-I, Kaynak Yayınları, İstanbul, 2012, p. 466-467. However, this claim is not true because İhsan Nuri, Biro Heski Telli and Sheikh Evdilqadir were on Mount Ağrı, not in Zilan. According to the memoir of İhsan Nuri, their only contribution to the Zilan revolt was organizing the Subhan and Norşin attacks on 29\textsuperscript{th} June 1930 as it was stated on the footnote number 203.

\textsuperscript{211} Some specific directives show that the air force had been authorized to bomb the villages and tents of people who were accused to support the rebels by the government. See: Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyanları-I, Kaynak Yayınları, İstanbul, 2012, p. 472. In fact, the people living in the tents were nomadic civilians. These people are called Koçer in Kurdish, and they raise flocks on plateaus.

\textsuperscript{212} Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyanları-I, Kaynak Yayınları, 2012, İstanbul, p. 468. However, the Turkish military reports confused the tribes here. These two tribes officially lived in Iran, and they were the citizens of Iran. The group named “Belikanli” is probably Mala Bozo, who were the supporters of the revolt. When the revolt was defeated, they returned to Iran. They did not surrender or move to Turkey. The Helikanli is Xelikan tribe, which had more troubles with Iran than with Turkey. After they returned to Iran the Turkish government invited them to Turkey to settle down "wherever they liked". Thus, the Xelikan tribe moved to Turkey in 1930 but the Turkish government sent them to the west part of Turkey, to Trakya, then to Ege, around Söke, not to "wherever they liked" to live. See: Hun, Mücahit Özden, Iğdır ve Ağrı Dağı İsyanı, Alter Yay., Ankara, 2019, p.119.
After the main military operation, a clearance campaign started in the Zeylan Valley by a battalion commanded by Derviş Ahmed Pasha (Derviş Bey) and the Kurdish militias that fought for the government. This clearance campaign led to the mass murder of civilians.

The archives of Cumhuriyet, which was a semi-official newspaper state that thousands of people were killed during the military operations in Zeylan. Similarly, the official military reports mention annihilation of the bandits and their supporters but do not mention exact numbers. According to these military reports, the supporters included civilians. For example, one of the directives of the 9th Corps Commander emphasizes that:

“[...all the villages which supported the revolt will be burned...], [...] to make clear to people that anyone who will be involved in the revolt will be punished, all villages and nomadic tribes on the plateaus which have been involved in the revolt must be bombed by the air forces...”

4.2.1.6 Oramar Revolt and Counterinsurgency: 16th July-10th October 1930

As was said before, the Turkish military and government used to explain the movements around Mount Ağrı as a banditry problem. However, Oramar (Oremar, in Kurdish) attempt is described in a different way in the reports. Unlike the previous military operations, where all Kurdish movements were described as acts of banditry, the Turkish military reports describe the Oramar rebellion within a political scenario. According to this account, while the Turkish Army was trying to defeat the rebellions around Zeylan, Çaldıran and Ağrı, provocations that were a mixture of banditry and ethnic claims were going on around Diyarbakır, Silvan, Sason, Lice, Çapakçur, Garzan and Muş. Also, tribal leaders who were backed by external forces sought to motivate people against the government with their religious propaganda and stimulated ethnic rebellion.

Likewise, foreign governments that had interests in Syria and Iraq were arming Kurdish tribes and encouraging them to attack Turkey. Namely, the Kurdish “bandits” who had

---

213 This campaign would be a carnage which left an imprinting experience in the collective memory of Kurmanj people. Derviş Bey and his squad, and some Kurdish militias are remembered with their brutality in the kilams. The Kurdish Keskoğlu tribesmen were the main militia forces in this carnage.

214 Cumhuriyet Gazetesi Arşivi (Cumhuriyet Newspaper archives), 29th June-28th August 1930.


216 The external forces here meaning the UK and France which were controlling Iraq and Syria.
crossed the Iraqi border and attacked Oramar were organized in this way. Sent by Sheikh Barzani, the “bandits” consisted of 500 armed men led by Mullah Huseyn Sherif. The aims of this insurgency were to prevent the Turkish military forces from defeating the revolt in Ağrı, to stimulate Kurdish ethnic claims, and to disturb the public order. The local civilians also joined the attack alongside the Barzani forces.

The Oramar insurgency occurred in the south of Ağrı, in the meeting of the Turkey-Iran-Iraq borders, around the Oramar, Şat, Şemdinan and Herki regions. It started with an attack on the town of Oramar and the military base of the border division on the 21st and 22nd of July 1930.

“The bandits who held this attack were alongside the Barzanis- civilians from Şemdinan, Herki, Şat, and Oramar. […] After the Şemdinan border division retreated together with the officers, the local people looted the ammunition and fled to the mountains with the arms. The neighboring villages also joined them.”

The first General Inspector İbrahim Tali reported the situation to the General Staff and described it as a plot by outsiders. He also asked for military reinforcement. However, the General Staff denied it, stating:

“Although the General Staff is aware that these incidents reflect a political agenda rather than being simple cases of banditry, we believe that they will be limited to the local level and not escalate into a full-scale Kurdish rebellion. Thus, the military forces in the region can defeat these local revolts.”

The Turkish General Staff was more aware of the situation than the local officers and governors. The attempt was far from being a big Kurdish rebellion. The main obstacle to a large, unified Kurdish rebellion was not only the fact that the movement was confined to certain tribes. Additionally, the local tribesmen who were fighting on the side of the government were also Kurdish. For example, Kurdish chieftains, such as Kasım Agha, Ferhat Agha, and Kerim Agha were the main antagonists of the Oramar fighters. Kasım Agha not did only report the attack on the Oramar border division to the military, but he also joined the Turkish division with his armed men and fought against the rebels. Ferhat Agha and Kerim

217 In fact, they were Bahdînî Kurds just from the other side of the border, but the Turkish military was still using the terms of the Ottoman army. During the Ottoman period this location was a part of the Mousul Province. At the time of Ağrı resistance it was controlled by Britannia. However, the Turkish military officers were still using the same names to describe the regions.


Agha came from Gever with their armed tribesmen to help the Turkish military to defeat the resistance. They were extremely helpful to the Turkish military.

The Oramar military operation to defeat the insurgency consisted of two stages: the first stage began with the joint attack of the Turkish military and Kurdish militias belonging to Ferhat Agha and Kerim Agha. This stage ended when they took control of the town of Oramar after an air bombardment on 28th July 1930.

The second stage was held between 27th of September and 10th October 1930. This phase of the operation was better organized than the first one and involved more troops as well as six warplanes. The operation ended with the defeat of the resistance after local clashes around Oramar and Şemdinan.

Apart from those who were killed, “[…]some of the rebels surrendered to the Turkish military while others managed to escape to Iraq…, […]after punishing the villages involved in the revolt…]” the operation ended.

4.2.1.7 The Third Military Operation on Ağrı: 7-14th September 1930

The third Ağrı military operation took place on the 7-14th September 1930. This operation directly targeted Mount Ağrı which was the center of the resistance. At the end of this operation, the Turkish military announced its ultimate victory.

According to the General Staff, the number of rebels on Mount Ağrı was thought to be approximately 2000 armed men who “mainly belonged to Hassas Örenli, Şiphanlı, Haydarani, Milânî, Hasanânî, Zîrnânî, Cibrânî and Mokorlu tribes.” All of them were

---


222 In fact, the number of armed men on the Mount Ağrî never became 2000 men. The Turkish authorities have exaggerated the numbers. İhsan Nuri confirms this in his memoir, and claims that the Turkish army officers were ashamed to report that they were defeated by a small group of Kurdish fighters. Instead, they were reporting that they were attacked by a big number of Kurdish forces. See: Pasha, Ihsan Nuri, Ağrı Dağı İsyani, Med Yay., Istanbul, 1996, p.79.

223 In this report almost all the names of people and tribes as well as the name of Xoybûn have been written wrong. The Turkish officers were typing the names as they heard because they did neither speak Kurdish nor understood the social structure of the tribes and families. Furthermore, when the telegraphs were sent to Ankara, perhaps some of the names were reshaped there once again. Moreover, it is very interesting to see how all the Turkish written accounts, including scholarly works, have copy-pasted these names without checking them with any other source. The correct names of the tribes are: Hassas Örenli is Hessesörî, Şiphanlı is Sîpki, Haydarani is Heyderî, Milânî is Mîlî, Hasanânî is Hesenî, Zîrnânî is Zîrkî, Cibrânî is Cibirî and Mokorlu is Merxurî. They are known Kurdish tribes. I checked the names together with Ahmed Aras for this dissertation.

91
led by Biro Heski Telli, yet above all there were Ihsan Nuri and the Armenian Zilan.\textsuperscript{224} The rebellion was backed\textsuperscript{225} by "Hoybon" which was built by Armenians and outsiders.\textsuperscript{226}

The last A\c{g}r\i military operation was decided at a cabinet meeting in Ankara on 28\textsuperscript{th} December 1929. Field Marshal Fevz\i Çakmak and the 1\textsuperscript{st} Inspector İbrahim Tali also attended this cabinet meeting. This operation was scheduled to take place in June 1930.

According to the numbers given in the Turkish military documents, 35,000-40,000 soldiers and 42 warplanes\textsuperscript{227} were organized for the last A\c{g}r\i military operation. It is reasonable to assume that several thousand militia members also participated in the operation. In this case, including the Kurdish militias, the number of mobilized Turkish military forces against the resisters was approximately 45,000 troops.

Through the documents, it seems there were no significant clashes between the rebels and the Turkish military forces. Instead, the rebels tried to escape to Iran. However, since the Iranian border was blocked by the Iranian forces, some failed to cross the border, and they had to choose between surrendering and facing death.

Moreover, after the defeat of the Zeylan revolt, the families of the rebels from Zeylan had moved to Mount A\c{g}r\i. Due to Turkish aggression and shortage of food and water this population was facing life-threatening problems. Civilians who could not fight had no chance to survive except by surrendering to the Turkish army or to escape to Iran.

However, a remarkably interesting report from the General Staff to the Minister of Interior on 7\textsuperscript{th} September, on the first day of the operation, claims that not only civilians but also the leading rebels prepared to surrender:

"Two sons of Kör Hüseyin Pasha, Memo and Nadir, have asked to surrender to our forces along with their relatives which consist of 200 tents. Some of the bandits have already surrendered, and others plan to surrender."\textsuperscript{228}

\footnotesize
\begin{itemize}
\item \textsuperscript{224} The Armenian Zilan (Ardesh Muradian, a member of Dashnaksutiun) was caught by Soviet soldiers and sent to Siberia in 1929. This means that he was not even in A\c{g}r\i in 1930. See; Paşa, İhsan Nuri, A\c{g}rî Dağı İşyanı, Med Yay., Istanbul,1996, pp. 61-63.
\item \textsuperscript{225} It worth noting that the Turkish General Staff claims that the Agîrî revolt of 1930 -not the previous ones- was backed by Xoybûn while the Kurdish written accounts claim that Xoybûn was leading the revolt. As we will see in the next pages, the collective memory does not contain any trace of the leadership of Xoybûn. Furthermore, we do not even hear the name of Xoybûn in the kilams regarding the clashes around Agîrî. Namely, the role of Xoybûn in the resistance is different in the collective memory from the Kurdish written accounts. This topic will be examined in detail in the next two sections of this chapter.
\item \textsuperscript{227} Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyanları-I, Kaynak Yayınları, Istanbul, 2012, pp. 525-528.
\item \textsuperscript{228} Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyanları-I, Kaynak Yayınları, Istanbul, 2012, p. 534. However, the reports do not indicate why they escaped to Iran since they planned to surrender. I could not find any other source to
\end{itemize}
Since the resistance was not strong, on 10th September, the 9th Army Corps informed the General Staff that their forces reached the height of 4000 meters on the mountain and besieged the rebels after killing hundreds of them.

Four days later, on 14th September, the General Staff released its last statement announced the absolute victory over the rebels. Most of the rebels had escaped or been killed, and those who remained were being “neutralized” wherever they were found. Since the operation was completed, the General Staff would not release any other statement.²²⁹

4.2.2 The Agirî Resistance as Portrayed in the Kurdish Written Accounts

In this section, two primary sources which focus on the Agirî resistance from the Kurdish nationalist perspective are examined. Along these two main books, secondary sources are also reviewed. These secondary accounts are mainly inspired by those two primary books. The section usually conveys the facts as written in the books. The critics and comments are usually on the footnotes and sometimes in the text.

As stated in the previous section, the main body of scholarly and popular Turkish accounts is based on the Turkish General Staff’s documents. Since these are the main available documents in Turkish, the Kurdish accounts have benefited from them as well.

However, some of the Turkish written accounts have become a part of the propaganda mechanism while others simply repeat the information of these official documents. Mostly, as was said earlier, the information based on the official military reports was not verified or critically questioned. Furthermore, almost all the authors have simply repeated the names of people, places, and tribes, sometimes wrongly, as they were given in the Turkish military reports²³⁰ as the names were not checked with Kurdish sources.


²³⁰ The following citation, which was shown in the earlier pages of this chapter, is a very common example which you can read almost all the Turkish written accounts. They have repeated the mistakes of the Turkish military reports mot-a-mot: “in the end of 1929 the amount of the bandits was consisting of 350 chevaliers and 120 infantrymen. They were mainly belonging to Hassas, Örenli, Şiphanlı, Haydaranlı, Milanlı, Hesananlı, Zirkanlı, Cibranlı and, Mokorlu tribes and they were led by Biro Haso. Above all of them there were Ihsan Nuri and the Armenian Zilan”. See; Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyanları-I, Kaynak Yayınları, 2012, İstanbul, p. 497.
Following the military reports, the Turkish popular and scholarly accounts are mainly built on the idea that the military operations around the Ağrı Mountain were conducted to stop banditry. Stimulated by outsiders, some reactionary Kurds dared to rebel against the progressive Turkish Republic around the Ağrı mountain between 1926 and 1930 as different armed groups. Their goal was to regain their former status, to continue banditry, or to act as an agency of some foreign states; however, they lost against the Turkish forces. “Kurdishness” was only a cover in these movements to hide their essential intention. Many Kurdish people were not involved in the riots but because of their tribal-familial connections a few tribes were active or supportive.

Contrary to this Turkish scenario, the Kurdish accounts present a totally different view. Despite failing in the Sheikh Said revolt, the Kurdish people, who were constantly seeking freedom, revolted against the Turkish government in 1926 in Ağrı. This revolt, Kurdish sources state, was led by Xoybûn, the Kurdish nationalist political entity, started in 1927 and continued until the late 1930s as a Kurdish national struggle for independence. Despite losing their position against the Turkish military which fought with large numbers of troops and air forces in 1930, the rebels did not give up, but fought in the region in small groups until 1932.

Based mainly on the memoirs of İhsan Nuri Paşa and the book of Garo Sasuni, this scenario represents the revolt as totally political and nationalistic in character. There are very few sources which argue that the role of Xoybûn was not as influential as is often described.

Being a member of the Ottoman and later the Turkish army, interacting with the Turkish national movement during the rise of İttihat ve Terakki, İhsan Nuri identified himself as a Kurdish national revolutionary. For this reason, he was in contact with the leaders of the Sheikh Said Revolt. Later, he escaped from the Turkish army in 1924 with a few other Kurdish military officers. İhsan Nuri was essentially a nationalist intellectual who was seeking freedom for Kurdish people.

According to İhsan Nuri, the Ağrı Kurdish Revolt started in 1926 and ended in September 1930. Appointed by Xoybûn, he described himself as the commander-in-chief of

---


234 İttihat ve Terakki Fırkası was a nationalist movement which was ruling the country between 1908 and 1918. Rising as a progressive movement, İttihat ve Terakki became a totalitarian group which ruled the country until its fall. They were also the organizer of the Armenian Genocide in 1915.
the Kurdish armed forces in Agîrî. He engaged subcommanders and governors, used the Kurdish national flag, and described the fighting forces as the Kurdish national army. He authored the above-mentioned book while he was living in Iran, many years after the defeat of the resistance. The memory of Ihsan Nuri is esteemed to be written in 1969 and then its parts related to the Agîrî resistance was translated into Turkish in Stockholm, in 1986. Most Kurdish intellectuals in Turkey heard of the memoir just after it was translated into Turkish. As a memoir, it does not contain a chronological order and it includes several inconsistencies. Mixed with the subjective personal notes of a romantic nationalist, his descriptions swing between reality and wishful remembrance. Nonetheless, it is important to reflect upon the first-hand witness of the resistance.

Garo Sasuni’s book was written as a serial in the newspaper of Hairenik in 1930 and 1931. In 1969 the articles were summarized and published as a book with additions such as the critics of Dêrsim resistance in 1938 and Kurdish movements after 1932.

The book is written more systematically if it is compared with the memoir of Ihsan Nuri. However, being a kind of blindfold of nationalistic aspect, the realities have been victimized to ideological approach in this book. As an Armenian nationalist, Sasuni approaches the Agîrî resistance from a pure political-nationalist aspect and exaggerates the facts according to this viewpoint. Unfortunately, most of the Kurdish accounts have used the information given by Sasuni without questioning it. Additionally, some of the accounts further exaggerated the already exaggerated facts.

Being a member of the Armenian nationalist-socialist party Dashnaksutiun, Garo Sasuni was an idealistic revolutionary who believed in an alliance between the Kurds and

---

235 Some people argue that the memoir was not written by Ihsan Nuri. Two people who have research and books about the resistance around Agîrî, Kemal Sûphandağ and Ahmed Aras are some of them. Since there are a lot of inconsistencies in the memoirs, this claim sounds reasonable. However, since it includes a lot of firsthand witnesses, it is impossible to argue that the memoir has been written without him as well. So, most probably, he narrated it to someone to be written, and the one who has scripted the memoir was not able to question the inconsistencies in the memoir. Or maybe the inconsistencies happened while it was polished by someone else. Additionally, Sedat Ulugana claims that the memory was intentionally or unintentionally distorted by the publisher in 1989. See; https://yeniyasamgazetesi4.com/bir-kurt-pasanin-anilar/ (Accessed on 03.12.2022).

236 Hairenik, the Armenian Newspaper started its publication on June 1913, and after December 1915 it was published as a daily newspaper until 1991.

237 For example, the journalist Ahmet Kahraman claims that 1400 warplanes had been used against the rebels in Agîrî by citing from Sasuni but in fact, despite having so many exaggerations, 1400 warplanes never have been mentioned in the book of Sasuni. See; Kahraman, Ahmed; Kürt İsyanları/Tedip ve Tenkil, Evrensel Basım Yayın, Istanbul, 2004, p. 242.

238 Dashnaksutiun, the Armenian Revolutionary Federation (ARF), is an Armenian nationalist and socialist political party founded in 1890 in Tbilisi-Georgia. For detailed research regarding the Dashnak-Khoybun alliance, see; Gorgas, Jordi Tejel, "The Last Ottoman Rogues: The Kurdish-Armenian Alliance in Syria and the New State System in the Interwar Middle East.” In: Ramazan Hakkı Öztan and Alp Yenen (eds), Age of Rogues:
Armenians. Hence, he was an optimistic supporter of both Xoybûn and the Agîrî resistance. Sasuni considered the collaboration between Xoybûn and Dashnaksutiu as partnership between the two nations, namely, the Kurds and Armenians, against Turkish aggression. He was also hopeful to find supporters among the Armenian Diaspora and European countries. By having such support, the Kurdish resistance would become an international case, and the Turkish government would be pushed back.

Since Dashnaksutiu was involved in establishment of Xoybûn, Sasuni was mainly interested in the resistance after establishment of Xoybûn. Counting the Kurds as 3.300,000 people, and the Armenians as 2.700,000, if these two nations acted together, they might succeed against the Turks who, he believed, consisted of 6.000,000 people.\footnote{Sasuni, Garo; Kürt Ulusal Hareketleri ve 15. YY’dan Günümüze Ermeni Kürt İlişkileri, Med yay., Istanbul, 1992, p. 335.}

Sasuni looks at the Agîrî revolt as the most significant part of the Kurdish independence struggle, and the Kurdish-Armenian relationship. In his view, the Agîrî rebellion had started in June 1930, not in 1926 or 1927. The movement before involvement of Xoybûn was the first Ararat (i.e., Agîrî) Rebellion, which took place in 1927.\footnote{Sasuni, Garo; Kürt Ulusal Hareketleri ve 15. YY’dan Günümüze Ermeni Kürt İlişkileri, Med yay., Istanbul, 1992, pp. 294-296.} Sasuni distinguishes these two movements as separate phenomena in 1927 and 1930.

Ihsan Nuri gives different information about the Agîrî resistance in his memoir, arguing that it started in 1926 under the leadership of Biro Heski Têllî but continued under his own command between 1927 and September 1930 as a unified, single revolt.\footnote{Paşa, Ihsan Nuri, Ağrı Dağı İsyanı, Med Yay., Istanbul, 1996, p. 16.}

The Kurdish accounts referring to the rebellion from 1926 mainly repeat the account in Ihsan Nuri’s memoir, which sees the first clashes between Biro Heski Têllî’s group and Turkish forces, which occurred in May 1926, as the rebellion’s starting point.

In his book, Sasuni describes a very well-organized riot led by Xoybûn and most of the Kurdish accounts accepted his version of events. However, the realities of the field were different and most of the information given by Sasuni was simply wishful.\footnote{The realities of the field and the weakness of Xoybûn will be analyzed on the next pages of this chapter.}

It seems that the book of Sasuni is based on information given by Xoybûn and Dashnaksutiu about the resistance in Agîrî. So, unlike the realities of the field, the resistance
is reflected through the eyes of these organizations. It appears that Sasuni relied mainly on the bulletins written by a member of Xoybûn in Lebanon or Syria to describe the current situation in the field.

It is not clear exactly when Ihsan Nuri joined the fighters in Agîrî, but from his memoir we know that he was in Agîrî in the spring of 1927. Xoybun was formed in October 1927. Possibly Ihsan Nuri was in contact with the people who founded Xoybûn before it was formally established, and the organization appointed him Commander-in-Chief when he was already in Agîrî.243 As a result, nearly all written Kurdish accounts describe him as the Commander-in-Chief of the Kurdish forces in Agîrî from late 1927 to September 1930.244

Like Garo Sasuni, Ihsan Nuri stresses the leading role of Xoybûn in the revolt of Agîrî, but he shows extraordinarily little evidence that the organization led the resistance.245 He claims that:

1. Xoybûn determined the tactics of war while he was trying to spread the rebellion to other regions such as Zîlan and Wan.
2. The uniforms which the Kurdish army used were designed by Xoybûn.
3. Xoybûn was able to bring Yaşar Khanum (his wife) from Turkey to Agîrî in 1930.246

243 This appointment needs further investigation. According to the written sources, he was appointed as Commander-in-Chief by Xoybûn in September 1927. However, Xoybûn was built in October 1927, namely, one month after the appointment. Since a decision/command/appointment of an unestablished organization would not be so effective, one may question, how and why the fighters should accept a decision of an unestablished organization and accept someone as their leader? The probable reason of accepting Ihsan Nuri as the Commander-in-Chief arose from his ex-status, not from Xoybûn. He was a military commander in the Ottoman-Turkish army in the same region prior to his escape.

244 The book of Mücahit Atilla Hun draws another picture. The leadership was handled by Biro Heskî in the beginning, then, passed to Ihsan Nûrî, and ended with Sheikh Evdilqadir. After the fall of the revolt, Biro Heskî was again the leader of resistance until he was killed, he argues. See; Hun, Mücahit Özden, Iğdır ve Ağrı Dağı İsyanı, Alter Yay., Ankara, 2019, pp. 51-52.

245 Based on these two books, and other written accounts produced by the members of Xoybûn, Alakom argues that “The Agîrî revolt which occurred around the Mount Agîrî between 1927 and 1930 was under the control and leadership of Xoybûn”. See; Alakom, Rohat; Xoybun Örgütü ve Ağrı Ayaklanması, Avesta, Istanbul, 2011, p. 65. This statement is de facto accepted by all the following Kurdish written accounts. Even most of the Turkish scholarly works have used this information by citing from Alakom without questioning it. However, as we will see in the next pages of this chapter, the influence of Xoybûn in the resistance is very questionable.

246 In fact, none of this evidence are convincing for the leadership of Xoybûn. Firstly, Ihsan Nuri was already a military commander but there was anyone in the board of Xoybûn who had military experience. Thus, Ihsan Nuri did not need to take any fighting tactics from them. Secondly, anyone can design a uniform by just copying-pasting from existing uniforms. It does not require an organizational capacity. Thirdly, Yaşar Khanoom was sent to Syria by the Turkish authorities upon the negotiation process between the fighters and Turkish authorities in 1928. However, their journey from Aleppo to Mount Agîrî took several months. Furthermore, Ihsan Nuri had gone to take his wife from Maku by himself since there was not anyone else to do it for him. Only this journey shows the weakness and incapability of Xoybûn, not its leadership. For the long and difficult trip of Yaşar
On the other hand, despite trying to put Xoybûn on the stage like Sasuni, Ihsan Nuri’s memoir is much closer to the reality of the situation, as it will be discussed at the end of this chapter and in the Conclusion. While Sasuni wrote down whatever information he received from Xoybûn or Dashnaksutian, Ihsan Nuri tells what he has witnessed and experienced in the field. Despite his idealism, the realities of the society, such as rivalry and hostility among the tribes, families, and persons, are not ignored. Thus, his memoir is closer to the reality. However, it is confused, and does not follow a chronological order.

Prior to the resistance in Agîrî, the mountains of Kurdistan were already shelters for escapees of various kinds. There were hundreds of wanted people on the mountains, who were divided into tens of different groups, consisting of:

a. Wanted people who were surviving in the rural areas by banditry.
b. Fugitives of local fights, who were also involved in banditry.
c. The survivors of Sheikh Said revolt. These people were also involved in banditry from time to time, to survive or to punish their enemies.

The law to exile Kurdish notables to the western part of Turkey in 1926 was the first step of the Turkish government to control Kurdish society after the Sheikh Said revolt. According to this order, most of the Kurdish chieftains were exiled to western and inner Anatolia to be isolated from the Kurdish community, far away from their homeland. Not only the chieftains who had shown sympathy for the Sheikh Said revolt, but also bystanders and even some Kurds who had fought on behalf of the Turkish government were exiled.247

Most of the chieftains obeyed this order and accepted exile with their families. Some others rejected it and escaped to the mountains.

Biro Heskî Têllî was one of those escapees around Agîrî. When he heard that he was listed by the government to be exiled he escaped to Mount Agîrî with his armed men who were less than a dozen of people. This was the beginning of the clashes around Agîrî.248

Therefore, according to the memoir of Ihsan Nuri, which has inspired most of the Kurdish written sources, the Agîrî rebellion was started in Bazîd (Turkish: DoğuBeyazit) in 1926 by Biro Heski Têllî from the Hessesorî tribe.249

Khanoom, see; Toktamış, Kumru, Bazi Kadınlar için Savaş Hiç bitmez / Yaşar Hanımın Anıları; Kürt Tarihi Dergisi, Number: 37, pp. 12-21.

247 Numbered as 85, this law was accepted on 31st May 1926 by the Turkish parliament. If this date is correct, the rebels such as Biro Heskî and Xalis Beg had escaped before it was accepted at the Turkish Parliament. This means, they had received this information during the preparation of the law through their private channels.

Then, in a couple of months, the following people met Biro Heskî and collaborated with him: Ferzende Begê Hesenî, as a survivor of the Sheikh Said revolt, and his armed Hesenan tribesmen; Adoyê Ezîzî, a wanted person, and his armed group; and Xalis Begê Sipkî who had also escaped from being exiled, with his Sipkan tribesmen.

The government sent troops to Agirî to defeat Biro Heskî and other armed men after the rebels attacked the Turkish troops on 13th May 1926. However, the operation failed because the fighters were aware of the preparation for a military operation. They were already mobilized. After small clashes, they escaped to Iran, and the Turkish army retreated to their base in Bazid in June 1926.

Since the Turkish military failed in this operation, Biro Heskî’s group grew. Several other people who were wanted by the government met him and joined his armed men. In this way, after the first Turkish military operation failed, Mount Agirî became a safe retreat for people who had problems with the Turkish government. Some of these people were wanted because of criminal cases, and others for being involved in the Sheikh Said revolt.

However, since Biro Heskî had collaborated with the Turkish government during the Sheikh Said revolt, a few Kurdish accounts do not consider his movement to have formed part of the Agirî Revolt until 1927, i.e., till the involvement of Ihsan Nuri and Xoybûn.

Other chieftains, such as Sheikh Evdilqadir and Temirê Şemkî who had escaped from exile, also joined the resistance. Thus, the resistance had more armed men, and more support from tribes. Between 1926 and 1927 many notables - like Sheikh Evdilqadir and Temirê Şemkî - as well as some bandits and fugitives, mostly together with their armed men, joined the resistance. In 1927, Ihsan Nuri began to organize the rebels, contacting chieftains to support or join the rebellion, using Kurdish political symbols, and trying to discipline the disorganized fighters. This was not easy, however, as there were troubles among the tribes,

249 For example, Ahmet Kahraman starts to glorification of Biro Heskî from his effort against the Russian army in the 1st World War and then, continues how he was brave as if “born to be a leader” of the Kurdish resistance. See; Kahraman, Ahmet; Kürt İsyanları/ Tedip ve Tenkil; Evrensel Basım yayın, Istanbul, 2003, p. 221.

250 To escape from the government and live in the mountains as a group of people until being caught, killed, or receiving an amnesty was common among Kurds until 1970s. In 1926, there were hundreds of different small armed groups in the mountains of Kurdistan. They were wanted by the government with different reasons. Most of them were surviving with banditry.

251 Interestingly, Ihsan Nuri simply conveys Biro Heskî’s collaboration with the government while constantly emphasizing the negative role of Kor Huseyin Pasha during and after the Sheikh Said revolt in 1925. For the negative role of Biro Heskî Tellî during the Sheikh Said revolt, Ihsan Nuri just utters what Biro Heskî has told him. He does not comment about it. See; Paşa, Ihsan Nuri, Ağrı Dağı İsyanı, Med Yay., 1996, Istanbul, pp. 22, 23.
and the fighters had no military discipline. In fact, the agenda which Ihsan Nuri was trying to implement did not match the reality of the fighting groups.

The Turkish side was reorganizing itself in the region in order to defeat the resistance forces. To achieve this aim, they passed a law establishing General Inspectorships on 16th July 1927, and appointed Ibrahim Tali as the 1st General Inspector. He was responsible for the Elaziz, Urfa, Hakkari, Bitlis, Siirt, Van, Mardin and Diyarbakir which were dominantly Kurdish provinces, as stated in the previous pages of this chapter.

In these circumstances, in September 1927, the second military operation of the Turkish army was conducted to defeat the resistance in Agirî. At the same time, meetings were going on among Kurdish people in Syria and Lebanon to establish Xoybûn. In this stage, the connection between the resistance and Xoybûn is controversial. Although most accounts accept that Ihsan Nuri was appointed as commander-in-chief of the resistance by Xoybûn, it seems plausible to assume that he was in touch with the organization personally not as the leaders of fighters in Agirî.

According to his memoir, Ihsan Nuri was in Xinis (Erzirom) when the military operation started. He was on a trip to observe the situation in the regions of the Heyderan and Hesenan tribes. He returned to Mount Agirî upon hearing that the Turkish army had started military operations there with 10,000 troops (one army division).

This was the 1st Agirî Rebellion, which continued for a month according to Sasuni, who claims that 2000 soldiers of the Turkish army were killed, and 400 were caught by the Kurdish forces.

Ihsan Nuri does not give a number but says that there were some officers among the captives. However, because of shortage of food all of them were freed a few days later.

The Turkish General Staff admitted that 5 of their officers were caught by the rebels but did not give an exact figure for the dead and captured soldiers. However, after the rebels freed

---


253 On the other hand, according to the Turkish General Staff, the 9th and 12th divisions of the 9th Army Corps were mobilized to defeat the rebels. This number is two times of the number given by the Kurdish accounts respectively 20,000 troops. See; *Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyanları-I*, Kaynak Yayınları, 2012, Istanbul, p. 331.


the captives, and one officer and five soldiers arrived at their base, the number of lost soldiers was tallied at 17.256

According to the Kurdish accounts, the Turkish military attack was a big victory for the Kurdish side, and a major fiasco for the Turks. However, according to the Turkish side it was not so much a failure as the lack of a total victory. The main obstacles to achieving a victory were lack of water for the troops, and the open border with Iran, which the rebels could easily cross. Thus, the Turkish side decided to take three new steps:

a. Building new military and intelligence services in the region.

b. Proclaiming an Amnesty Law to convince the fighters to surrender.

c. Putting pressure on Iran to control their border.

4.2.2.1 Xoybûn

While the Turkish government and the rebels were preparing for further steps after the military operation in Ağrı in the autumn of 1927, Kurdish intellectuals and some exiled chieftains met with the representatives of the Armenian Dashnaksutuni Party in Lebanon in October 1927, to set up Xoybûn. The organizer, who had contacted Kurdish notables in Syria and Iraq to persuade them to unify and organize, was Memduh Selîm Beg.257 Xoybûn aimed to unify the Kurdish tribes and organize armed groups to act against the Turkish government, to wipe them out in Kurdistan. This aim was formulated on the statute of Xoybûn as noted below:

“The aim of the organization is building an independent Kurdistan on the land which Kurds live on, and which is occupied by the Turkish government. […] To achieve this aim, Xoybûn will organize Kurdish people and contact third parties for the benefit of the Kurds.”258

According to different written accounts, after the establishment of Xoybûn, an executive board would be selected. Celadet Bedirxan, Mistefê Şahîn (Berazî), Bozanê Şahîn (Berazî),


257 Memduh Selîm Beg was a Kurdish intellectual who was born in Wan in 1880 and died in Damascus in 1976. He was a member of the Hêvî association before the Sheikh Said revolt, and he escaped to Syria after the revolt failed. In Syria he continued his effort to unify Kurdish intellectual and notables. Xoybûn was built on this effort. Furthermore, it can be said that Memduh Selim was the only person among the foremost names of Xoybûn who did not seek for any personal aim, and who did not involve any rivalry with other names.

Haco Agha (Hevêrkî), Emîn Agha (Remanî) and Fehmî Bilal were the Board members. Citing from one of the attendants of the first meeting, Abdurrahman Agha’s memoir in Armanc Newspaper in 1989, Alakom argues that the first board members were Celadet Bedirxan, Memduh Selim, M. Sükru Sekban, Haco Agha, Emîn Agha, Ali Riza, Mustafa Şahin (Beraşî), Bozan Şahin (Beraşî), Kerim Beg, Tevfik Beg, Bedreddin Agha and Fehmî Bilal. According to another source “The core of the Khoybun League at the time of its creation was made up of Jaladat Badirkhan (1893–1951), Kamuran Badirkhan (1895–1978), Sureya Badirkhan (1883–1938), Memduh Selim (1897–1976), Mehmed Sükrü Sekban (1881–1960), Ihsan Nuri (1893–1976), Bozan Shahin Beg (1895–1968), Mustafa Shahin Beg (?–1953), Sheikh Abdul Rahman Garisi (1869–1932), Hajo Agha (?–1940) and Rifat Mevlanzade (1869–1930).”

In 1928, exiled chieftains such as Kor Huseyin Pasha and Hecî Mûsa Begê Xoytî escaped from exile and took refuge among the Syrian Kurds. Haco Agha, the chieftain of Hevêrkî tribe offered them hospitality and brought them into contact with Xoybûn. According to the Kurdish written accounts, having Kor Huseyin Pasha on their side was a big gain, because at his order, all Heyderan tribes would join or support the movement in Agirî.

Also, Kadri and Ekrem Cemîl Pasha, two cousins from a notable family in Diyarbakir, escaped to Syria in 1928 and joined the organization in 1929.

---

259 However, it is very questionable that Fehmi Bilal had become a member of the board since he was only the representative of Sheikh Elî Riza, the son of Sheikh Said. Additionally, he had fight with Celadet Bedirxan at the first meeting of Xoybûn and was injured in the fight. Furthermore, Fehmi Bilal left Syria after this incident and settled in Iraqi Kurdistan until 1936 when Turkey announced another Amnesty Law regarding the 13th anniversary of building of the Turkish Republic.


262 Kemal Süphandağ, the grandchild of Kor Huseyin Pasha claims that not his grandfather but his sons had become members of Xoybûn when they escaped to Syria from the exile. See, the IMC TV, Dîrok, Part: 38. In my interview with him, citing from Qedrîcan, Ahmed Aras also confirmed that not Kor Huseyin Pasha himself, but his sons joined Xoybûn. On the other hand, Sedat Ulugana claims that Kor Huseyin Pasha and others together became a member of Xoybûn, and their photo was published on Filqetîl Di Kurdiye Magazine. Ulugana, Sedat; Ağrı Direnisi ve Zilan Katliamı, Peri Yay., Istanbul, 2012, p. 30. Ahmet Kahraman also argues that they all together joined Xoybûn. Kahraman, Ahmet; Kürt İsyanları/ Tedip ve Tenkil; Evrensel Basım yayın, Istanbul, 2003, p. 216.

263 However, it did not happen. To receive Amnesty from the Turkish government, Kor Huseyin Pasha was killed by Medenî Beg, the son of Heçî Mûsa Begê Xoytî in Iraqi Kurdistan. Kor Huseyin Pasha’s two sons led the uprising in Zîlan as it was shown in the previous pages.
Thus, as a small organization which mainly consisted of exiled Kurdish notables in Syria, Xoybûn brought together:

a. The intellectual escapees of the Sheikh Said revolt such as the Bedirxan brothers, Memduh Selim, and Fehmi Bilal.

b. The *traitors* of the Sheikh Said Revolt such as Kor Huseyin Pasha, Hecî Mûsa Begê Xoytî, and Haco Agha.

c. The family members of the Kurdish militias involved in the Armenian Genocide such as Emîn Agha (Remanî) and sons of Cemil Pasha.

---

264 Contrary to the other Kurdish elite, the Bedirxanî family was opposite to Abdul Hamid II. In earlier times, Abdurrezzaq Bedirxan was trying to get support from Russians against the Ottomans while other Kurdish tribes were fighting against Russians under the command of the Ottomans during the Ottoman-Russian Wars. Otherwise, during the First World War the Kurdis chieftains were considering Russia and its Armenian alliance as enemies while Abdurrahman Bedirxan was advocating the alliance of Kurds and Armenians in collaboration with the Russians. See; Çelik, Adnan; *Kürt Aydınlarının Siyasi Hatıratında 1915 ve Ermeniler*, Yeni Yaşam gazetesi, January-February 2019.

265 Kemal Süphandağ, the grandchild of Kor Huseyin Pasha denies that Kor Huseyin Pasha involved into the Sheikh Said revolt either in a positive nor negative way because the religious authority Bediuzzeman Saidî Kurdi (or Nûrsî, 1878-1960) did not let him to side with the revolt. Kor Huseyin Pasha was advised by Saîdî Nûrsî that if he would join the revolt, he would have muslim-blood on his hands. See; IMC TV, *Dîrok*, Part: 38. However, in his memoir, Ihsan Nuri, claims that Kor Huseyin Pasha was a traitor while his two sons Nadir and Mehemed were true patriots. See; Paşa, Ihsan Nuri, * Ağrı Dağı İşıyanı*, Med Yay., Istanbul, 1996, p. 64-66.

266 Conveying from the governor of Bitlis Kazım Dirik, the Kurdish politician Abdülmelik Fırat argues that when the Sheikh Said revolt happened in 1925, Heci Mûsa Beg (Xoytî), Sheikh Mahsûm (Norşînî), and Sheikh Ebdulbaqî had applied to Kazım Dirik for 50.000 pieces of gold and arms to fight against the Sheikh Said rebellion. After persistently repeating this request, Kazım Dirik says, he had given what they asked, and they fought for the government against the rebels. After defeating the revolt, Kazım Dirik took back the double of money he gave and exiled them. See; Kaya, Ferzende; *Mezopotamya Sûrgünû A. Fırat’ın Yaşam Öyküsü*, Anka Yay., 2003, p. 54.

267 The Kurdish politician Abdülmelik Fırat reveals that when the Sheikh Said revolt was going on, the chieftain of Hevêrkî tribe Haco Agha sent a letter to the Turkish government and briefed that his tribe is ready to fight with the ‘traitors’ (Sheikh Said) behalf on the strong forces of the Turkish Republic. See, Kaya, Ferzende; *Mezopotamya Sûrgünû A. Fırat’ın Yaşam Öyküsü*, Anka Yay., 2003, p.37. Haco Agha’s son Çaçan also confirms that they fought with the rebel’s behalf of the Turkish government near Diyarbekir. See; Cibo, Nezir; *Hevêrkî Haco Ağa*, Kürt Tarihi Dergisi, Number: 37, pp. 58-65.

268 Emin Agha’s two brothers were directly organized by the governor of Diyarbakir Dr. Reşit Bey to kill the Armenian notables in the city. The two brothers killed a few groups of wealthy Armenians, and shared with Dr. Reşit Bey what they robbed from the murdered people. Then, Dr. Reşit Bey ordered killing of the two brothers in Tilelo whenever he did not need them anymore. See; Demirer, Hüseyin, *Ha Wer Delall Emtînê Perîçanê’în Hayatt*, Avesta Yay., Istanbul, 2008, pp.75-89.

269 The uncle of Kadri and Ekrem Cemil Pasha was a militia commander in Diyarbakir during the Armenian Genocide but both of the cousins are in silence about the involvement of their family to the genocide in their memory books. For a very good article about the memory of the first and second generations of Kurdish intellectuals in the early Republican years, see; Çelik, Adnan; *Kürt Aydınların Siyasi Hatıratında 1915 ve Ermeniler*, Yeni Yaşam gazetesi, January-February, 2019. Similarly, Fırat Aydınkaya questions the silence of the first and second generation Kurdish intellectuals’ regarding the Armenian Genocide. See; Interview with Fırat Aydınkaya, [https://www.agos.com.tr/tr/yazi/11405/bir-baska-acidan-kurtlerin-ermeni-soykirimin-daki-rolu](https://www.agos.com.tr/tr/yazi/11405/bir-baska-acidan-kurtlerin-ermeni-soykirimin-daki-rolu) (Accessed on 2nd December, 2022).
Nonetheless, making these figures work harmoniously together was not a smooth process. The troubles among the foremost names became bigger. Even more, after the failure of the resistance in Agîrî, the trouble between the Badirxanîs and Cemilpaşazades reached a level that caused the Bedîrxan brothers to leave Xoybûn.\textsuperscript{270}

4.2.2.2 The Amnesty and Negotiation Process

After the failure of the second military operation in Agîrî, while building intelligence service in Karaköse to have more spies and militias among local people, the Turkish government announced an Amnesty Law in 1928. The reason for this amnesty was weakening the resistance and to calm the Kurdish community which was angry about the exile policy of the government. This amnesty included members of the resistance in Agîrî, the exiled chieftains, and the Kurdish people who escaped from Turkey.

This attempt did not achieve its aim in Agîrî because the fighters rejected it, according to Sasuni. He quotes the whole bulletin of Xoybûn against the amnesty, giving examples of how someone was punished by the Turkish government, even though he had accepted the amnesty and surrendered etc. Then, he concludes that the amnesty trick of the government did not work since the Agîrî resisters and Xoybûn rejected it.

Sasuni mentions the negotiations between the government and the rebels regarding the amnesty as well. In his statement, the Turkish government sent a delegation to meet the resistance leaders in May 1928. The Turkish delegation included the 1\textsuperscript{st} General Inspector Ibrahim Tali, 12 members of parliament, and military officers. The Kurdish delegation consisted of Ihsan Nuri, Biro Heskî Têllî, and Xalis Beg alongside 60 mounted fighters.

Two delegations met on the Şîxlû (Şıhlî, in Turkish) bridge near Agîrî. The Turkish side claimed that all people on the mountain would benefit from the amnesty if they left their arms and surrendered. Plus, Ihsan Nuri would be appointed to any official position of his choice, either within or outside of Turkey.

Ihsan Nuri, speaking as the appointed head commander by Xoybûn, and the spokesman of the fighters on the mountain, rejected the amnesty and asked the Turkish army and officers to leave Kurdistan.\textsuperscript{271}

\textsuperscript{270}Alakom gives further information regarding this issue in his book which focuses on Xoybûn. See; Alakom, Rohat; \textit{Xoybun Örgütü ve Ağrı Ayaklanması}, Avesta, Istanbul, 2011, pp.100,101.

\textsuperscript{271}Sasuni, Garo, \textit{Kürt Ulusal Hareketleri ve 15. YY’dan Günümüze Ermeni Kürt İlişkileri}, Med Yay., Istanbul, 1992, pp. 305-307. Emin Karaca argues that the amnesty was rejected by citing from Sasuni. See; Karaca, Emin;
On the other hand, Ihsan Nuri draws a different scenario regarding this case: the government sent two different delegations at two different times to negotiate with the rebels. Although the first meeting had a positive atmosphere, the second meeting ended in disagreement. Furthermore, the first Turkish delegation included two members of the Turkish parliament, not twelve, and some military officers. The second meeting consisted of only local Turkish officers and Kurds who sided with the Turkish government.

Otherwise, contrary to the argument of Sasuni, who claims that the amnesty was totally rejected by the Kurds, many people accepted the amnesty and left Mount Agirî. Temirê Şemkî and Sheikh Evdilqadir were among the foremost names. Sheikh Evdilqadir was the strongest figure among the rebels since he was the leader of the Saqan tribe, and furthermore he was a sheikh who had religious power and was an influential person through this position. Temirê Şemkî was the appointed Gendarme Commander of Agirî by Ihsan Nuri. Therefore, after a big portion of the rebels left the resistance and went back to their everyday lives, there were only three fighter groups left in Agirî, which were led by Ferzende Beg, Xalis Beg and Edoyê Ezîzî. The fighters tried to hide this reality by making these three groups more active than normally after it became clear that no solution would come out from the negotiation process.²⁷²

Moreover, despite releasing a harsh declaration against the amnesty, Xoybûn was losing its foremost names. The declarations were mainly written by Celadet Bedirxan to stop losing ground. The founders of Xoybun such as Şukri Sekban, Emîn Agha (the chieftain of Reman tribe) and the religious leader Sheikh Elî Riza, the son of Sheikh Said, returned to Turkey when the amnesty was proclaimed. Eventually Xoybûn was almost abandoned.²⁷³

Sheikh Elî Riza was arrested and jailed for a long time with his friends upon their return to Turkey. Among the other people who returned to Turkey because of the amnesty law, Şukri

---

²⁷² Paşa, Ihsan Nuri, Ağrı Dağı İsyanı, Med Yay., Istanbul, 1996, pp. 34-35. Meantime, we should remind that, in this stage the people on the mount were almost unorganized. They were involving in robbery, having troubles with rival tribes, and having infightings which one of them resulted with killing of Edoyê Ezîzî. This assassination will be analyzed in the next pages of this chapter.

²⁷³ This would be a kind of turn off for Xoybûn which was already not so strong, and which was suffering because of different approaches of the board members. The organization became weaker after the amnesty. When Kadri and Ekrem Cemil Pashazade left Diyarbakir and went to Syria to join Xoybûn in 1929, the organization was totally abandoned. Celadet and Suverya Bedirxan brothers had immigrated to Cairo. Memduh Selîm Beg turned back to the French controlled Antakya and started to work as a teacher. Thus, after 1929, the leadership would be sustained by these two Pashazade cousins. The organization would somehow survive as a small and non-effective entity until 1946, and then, it was abolished.
Sekban and Emîn Agha started to work for the Turkish government. Emîn Agha became a militia leader of the government and was involved in killing of many Kurds. Nonetheless, the Turkish army chose to kill him when they no longer needed him. Şukri Sekban became a part of the propaganda machine of the Turkish government and published a book entitled La Question Kurde, in Paris. In the book, he argues that the Kurdish people are originally “Turkic”. For a while, the negotiation process calmed the atmosphere around Mount Agirî. Both sides stopped attacking each other during this period. The Turkish government had let family members of Biro Heskî Têllî move to Mount Agirî and settle in a village called Kurdava. They also sent Yaşar Khanum, the wife of Ihsan Nuri, to Syria upon his request. Sheikh Evdilqadir’s family was also allowed to return from exile and settle near Mount Agirî. However, the Turks were also preparing for military operations if negotiations failed.

As a result, the situation between 1927 and 1928 was unstable. Political and military steps occurred at the same time. Both the rebels and the Turkish side were negotiating while also preparing for further clashes.

Garo Sasuni describes this unstable period as a solid, well-organized period for preparing the “Big Ararat Revolt.” The fighters were getting ready, people were organizing, small fighter groups were destroying the Turkish military bases, and all were waiting for orders from Xoybûn to start the rebellion.

4.2.2.3 The End of Negotiation Process

In these circumstances, in the fall of 1928, the clashes started again. The first and most important clash happened in Kanikork. This clash is described by Ihsan Nuri in a very


275 This village was belonged to the Armenian people previously, and it was empty since the Genocide. The Agirî fighters re-named it as Kurdava and settled there.

fantastic, nationalistic way. In a very surrealistic scene, Ihsan Nuri mentions the victory of 21 Kurdish fighters against 2000 Turkish troops who were supported by the air forces.\(^{277}\)

In 1929, disappointment with the amnesty led the movement to grow in Ağrı again. People such as Temirê Şemî, who had left the mount after the amnesty, returned. Other people who had problems with the Turkish government were also rejoining the resistance.\(^{278}\)

Similarly, the Tendürük military operation, which was held in September 1929 to disarm and displace Sheikh Evdilqadir, the religious leader of the Saqan tribe, resulted in his rejoining the resistance.

The beginning of 1930 was the final year for both the Kurdish and Turkish sides. The Turkish military documents describe this period as preparation for the 3rd Ağrı military operation to annihilate the banditry problem.

According to most Kurdish accounts, this was the biggest step towards Kurdish independence. The Kurdish flag was already waving on Mount Ağrı, and it appeared that, under the ideological leadership of Xoybûn, it would soon spread throughout Kurdistan. Since the Turkish government was aware of this, they were preparing to destroy the Ağrı Kurdish National Forces to prevent such a revolution.

Thus, the big Kurdish resistance started after the Turkish army moved on Mount Ağrı. Ihsan Nurî ordered major attacks to reduce the pressure on the mountain, to break the Turkish forces, and to spread the revolt to the neighboring regions. The first attack started on 4\(^{th}\) July 1930, around the Zilan valley. It was backed by the fighters in Ağrı according to a directive sent by Ihsan Nurî.\(^{279}\)

In fact, the assault happened differently, two weeks earlier than was planned by Ihsan Nuri, in the night of 20\(^{th}\) January 1930, led by Kor Huseyin Pasha’s sons Nadir and Mehmed, and strengthened by Ûsivê Evdal and Seyîd Resûl, a hundred Heyderan fighters attacked Zilan district, took control of it, and defeated the Turkish military base. Then they marched on Erdiş (Turk: Erciş) where the Turkish military and militias were defending the city against the

---

\(^{277}\) Interestingly, Ihsan Nuri reveals that he did not have a rifle until the battle of Kanikor. In this battle he captured a gun from the Turkish forces. See; Paşa, Ihsan Nuri, Ağrı Dağı İsyanı, Med Yay., Istanbul, 1996, pp. 49, 50, 78.

\(^{278}\) Nonetheless, the problem was still banditry according to the Turkish government. Sent on the 1\(^{st}\) and 3\(^{rd}\) of July 1929, two domestic telegraphs (placed in the Appendices) regarding some clashes with the Kurdish groups led by Ferzende Beg indicates their approach. The group is called as “the band of Ferzende”. See; Appendices, Telegraphs to the Prime Minister İsmet İnönü, Figure numbers 18 and 19.

\(^{279}\) A copy of this directive which was dated as 18\(^{th}\) June 1930 had been found on one of the killed fighters and published by the Turkish military officer Zühtü Güven on the Dünya Newspaper as a serial between 6\(^{th}\) March-29\(^{th}\) April 1953 as a part of his memoir. See, Karaca, Emin, Ağrı Eteklerinde İşyan/ Bir Kürt İsyanının Anatomisi, Puslu Yay., Istanbul, 2013, pp.192-195.
Kurdish fighters. Therefore, despite having partial control in the town, the fighters could not defeat the militias and the Turkish military in Erdiş. \(^{280}\)

Not waiting until 4\(^{th}\) July, and not informing Ihsan Nuri that the attack started was the biggest mistake of the fighters in Zîlan, according to Ihsan Nuri. By the time the Agîrî leaders heard that the attack had begun, the Turkish military already started to isolate the area, wiping out the resistance. They sent groups to the Suphan and Norşin Turkish military bases to help the fighters in Zîlan, but it was too late. \(^{281}\) The Turkish army had taken the initiative, under the protection of its air forces, and with the contribution of Kurdish militias fighting for them, they advanced on the ground.

Indeed, Nadir and Mehemed Beg were suffering from lack of political and military experience. For example, during the Patnos siege, while Nadir Beg was preparing to attack the military base in Patnos, his brother Mehemed Beg called the military base to surrender. Thus, the military prepared for the counterattack. In this way, Nadir Beg and his group lost a lot of men when they attacked the base. \(^{282}\)

The revolt in Zîlan continued throughout July 1930, but as the Turkish military forces were advancing, the Kurdish fighters retreated. The priority of the resisters was to secure their families’ safety by moving them higher up Mount Agîrî, especially after the commencement of air bombardments, which was regarded as a punishment campaign on civilians. However, having families on the mountain was a further disadvantage for the fighters since these families became open targets for the Turkish air forces. Further complicating the situation was the lack of water and food on the mountain.

Although the revolt in Zîlan was bigger than in Agîrî, and connected to the resistance, Sasuni does not consider the Zîlan rebellion as a part of the Agîrî revolt. Instead, he mentions it as a parallel movement led by the sons of Kor Huseyn Pasha and Ibrahim Beg (the son of

\(^{280}\) On the other hand, the revolt in Zîlan did not start in that way, according to Kemal Süphandağ. Five sons of Kor Huseyn Pasha had agreed to meet on the Mount Agîrî, and to start a revolt in Zîlan in accordance with the Agîrî leaders. However, three of them, Afit, Silêman and Üsiv were killed by mercenaries while trying to reach Mount Agîrî. Mehemed and Nadir succeed to reach the outskirts of the mount after being faced with a lot of threats. Mercenaries, even some of their relatives were keep reporting them to the Turkish military whenever they received information regarding their whereabouts. Unfortunately, the rebels on the mount could not manage to take them to up. Thus, they returned to Zîlan, and started the rebellion by their own. See; Süphandağ, Kemal, Osmanlı Arşiv Belgelerinde Heyderan Aşireti ve Ağrı Direnişi, Pel Yay., Istanbul, 2021, pp. 183, 210-211.


Emin Pasha). However, the rebellions were somehow related as we saw through the given directive by Ihsan Nuri in the previous page. Furthermore, Mehemed Beg, the son of Kor Huseyin Pasha also confirms they had relations with Ihsan Nuri and Xoybûn.

The second attempt to defeat Turkish aggression on Ağrı was the attack on Oremar on 21st and 22nd July 1930. Sent by Sheikh Ahmed Barzanî, under the leadership of Mullah Huseyin Sherif, a few hundred Kurdish fighters from southern Kurdistan - which was under British Mandate area - marched on the town of Oremar and the military border subdivision base.

Although the rebels took control of the town of Oremar, they could not defeat the military base at the border. They sieged it for a few days but then, the Turkish military reached the subdivision and forced the rebels out.

The answer of the Turkish army to these attempts was harsh and brutal. The Turkish air forces started to bomb the civilians on 2nd August and continued it throughout the month. Thus, while the Kurdish fighters were retreating, the Turkish troops were advancing on the ground. The Turkish forces burned villages and killed civilians as part of their punishment campaign.

Another attempt to support the resistance from the south - the French controlled area - did not work at all. Haco Agha, who was one of the foremost names in Xoybûn, tried to advance within the borders of Turkey alongside his armed tribesmen. However, he retreated without a clash with the Turkish army. He had so many troubles with local Kurdish tribes that before the Turkish military acted, those rival tribesmen stopped Haco Agha advancing on the ground.

---


285 As it was said on the previous pages, we hear nothing about the Oremar revolt from Ihsan Nuri except some citation from the Cumhuriyet newspaper. It looks that Ihsan Nuri had learned the Oremar attempt after the defeat of the resistance while he was living in Iran. It is also very interesting that the Oremar attempt is accepted as a direct contribution to the resistance in Ağrı by the Turkish General Staff. Perhaps, the Turkish side had understood that the Oremar attack was done to spread the resistance to Hakkari whilst Ihsan Nuri was not aware of it being isolated on the Mount Ağrı.

286 Haco Agha, being the chieftain of Hewêrkî tribe, had sided with the Turkish government during the Sheikh Said revolt as stated in the footnotes of the section of “Xoybûn”.

After the two major attempts to spread the resistance, the Zilan and Oremar attacks, were repelled by the Turkish military, the situation became critical for the fighters on Mount Ağrı. There were approximately a few hundred fighters, with limited ammunition, and facing a scarcity of food and water.

During August of 1930, whilst the Turkish army besieged Mount Ağrı, enforcing their military to start the major attack, special battalions together with Kurdish militias sustained a clearance and punishment campaign in the villages of Zilan region under the command of Derviş Pasha. Thousands of civilians were killed in this campaign while several villages were burnt. As the bloodiest part of the Turkish military operations around Ağrı, Sasuni mentions that around 5,000 civilians were killed, while the Turkish newspaper Cumhuriyet claimed 15,000 bandits were killed in the Zilan Valley only.

The Turkish military started attacks on Mount Ağrı in the beginning of September 1930. Turkish troops which consisted of 66,000 soldiers and had 100 warplanes, were attacking a few hundred fighters who suffered from a lack of water and ammunition, as İhsan Nuri states. The fighters put up resistance against the major Turkish attack while also trying to escape with their families to Iran.

Sasuni also argues that 60,000 Turkish troops alongside 100 bomber jets were sent to defeat the resistance in 1930. Furthermore, by citing from an anonymous European


289 The number of the victims is a very controversial topic, and each source gives different numbers. As we see above, Garo Sasuni mentions about 5,000 deaths in Zilan. The Cumhuriyet Newspaper conveys 15,000 killed people only in the Zilan valley. Some other accounts give much more higher numbers. Interestingly, the numbers given by the Cumhuriyet Newspaper have directly been cited by almost all Kurdish accounts since the numbers are too high. The newspaper was claiming that only one Turkish platoon had killed 1,000 bandits in one single operation. The Turkish accounts have directly transferred these numbers to show the killed civilian people in Zilan. However, as we check the population of the people in the region, in compare of the habitants around the region, we can easily recognize that the numbers given by the newspaper is mostly propaganda. According to the official census statistics of 1927 the total population of Turkey was 13,648,270. The population of Van province was 75,309 and Hakkari was 24,980. Although the number of the population in Bayezid was 104,586, only 58.26% of them was Kurdish speaking people. Source: http://www.mku.edu.tr/files/200-0bb55d9e-c0bb-f413b-a4a9-d21120852f52.pdf (Accessed on 1st September 2022.) In this sense, we can estimate that the total number of Kurdish people in Bayezid province was around 60,000. This number was including the militia fighting behalf of the government and their families, and the number of bystander villages. Yet, it was the bloodiest phase of the Ağrı resistance but claiming killed tens of thousands of Kurdish people in Zilan does not match with the number of habitants in the area. Two other sources mention different numbers: Dengbêj Reso mentions 1,500 victims which were killed by the squad of Derviş Pasha and Kurdish militias in the Kilama Gelîyê Zilan. The Associated Press counts the killed Kurds as 3.000 people. The mentioned news of Associated Press is in the Appendices of the dissertation, Figure 17-b.

290 İhsan Nuri Paşa has cited these numbers from the Cumhuriyet Newspaper. See; Paşa, İhsan Nuri. Ağrı Dağı İsyânı, Med Yay., Istanbul, 1996, pp. 98, 107, 111.
newspaper, this number was increased to 100,000 troops and 100 aircrafts in his book. These numbers have been repeated by many Kurdish accounts.

The offensive of the Turkish army, combined with the contribution of Kurdish militias was too substantial for the fighters in Agirî. The air bombardment, the huge numbers of the Turkish troops, the mass killing of civilians in the Zilan Valley, plus the collaboration of Kurdish militias who knew the territory better than the Turkish troops, proved to be an insurmountable barrier in the isolated topography of Mount Agirî. Thus, they decided to leave Mount Agirî, and escape to Iran.

However, the situation on the Iranian border was also getting worse. The Iranian government, which maintained a neutral position for a long time, changed its attitude at a very critical moment, choosing to ratify an agreement with the Turkish government.

This was an extraordinary disappointment for the fighters, especially for the commander-in-chief commander Ihsan Nuri. Until this political shift, the leaders of the Agirî resistance never considered Iran as an enemy which might collaborate with Turkey.

In fact, after maintaining a neutral position for a long time, upon the pressure of the former Soviet Union, Iran had changed its position in favor of Turkey. And, after this political shift, the land which was under the control of Iran was no longer safe for the Kurdish fighters.


292 It looks that if you take out some exceptions such as Kemal Süphandağ who claims that 50 warplanes were used to defeat the Agirî rebellion (See; Kemal Süphandağ: IMC TV; Dirok, Part: 38) all the Kurdish written accounts agree that 100 warplanes had been used against the Agirî revolt in 1930. However, if we compare this number with the total numbers of the Turkish Air Forces in that time, we fall in a big contradiction. In fact, the total number of the Turkish jets was not more than 100 warplanes in 1930. In 1928, the whole budget of the Turkish Air Forces was 4,526,991 TL, and the number of staff was 407. The budget was designed for 100 aircrafts, and it did not change so much until 1932. The Turkish Air forces was re-designed through both its hierarchical structure and management, but the number of warplanes was still around 100 in 1930. And despite a big campaign to increase the number of warplanes between 1932 and 1936, the number of fighter jets was still 215, in 1938. This number would reach 500 in 1940. See; Yalçın, Osman, Türk Tarihi Bakımından 20. Yüzyılda Iki Önemli Gelişme: “Havacılığın ve Bir Liderin Doğuşu” (Turkish Studies - International Periodical For The Languages, Literature and History of Turkish or Turkic, Volume 6/2 Spring 2011, p. 1033-1062).

The official number of the Turkish warplanes used in the third Agirî military operation was 42 which 17 of them were belong to the 3rd Warplane Battalion of Karaköse, and 25 of them were belong to the 1st Warplane Battalion of Erciş. See: Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyânları-I, Kaynak Yayınları, 2012, Istanbul, pp. 514-525.

293 Iran and Turkey had agreed upon some protocols on the 22nd of April 1926 and on 15th June 1928, but Iran did not apply them until the summer of 1930. These protocols became agreement and signed officially on 23rd January 1932. See; Soysal, Ismail, Tarihçeleri ve Açıklamaları ile Birlikte, Türkiye’nin Siyasal Andaşmaları Cilt:1. (1920–1945), Türk Tarih Kurumu Basimevi, Ankara, 1983, pp. 276-278.

294 The memory of the leader of the resistance, Ihsan Nuri Paşa, is a clear proof of this approach. In his memoir he expresses his/their disappointment about the Iran’s changed policy toward to Kurds because they had always considered Iran as a friend of Kurds. See; Paşa, Ihsan Nuri, Ağrı Dağı İsyani, Peri Yayınları, Istanbul, 1992, pp.79, 104-107.
Besides allowing the Turkish troops to operate within the Iranian borders, the Iranian government was trying to disarm the rebels by asking them to surrender. To facilitate this, they sent military forces and militias to catch or kill the Kurdish fighters who refused to leave their arms to surrender and become refugees in Iran.

Sasuni criticizes the Iranian position during the resistance. However, he also argues, after four months of balancing diplomacy between the Kurds and Turks, under the pressure of the Soviet government, and upon seeing the fall of the resistance, the Iranian government abandoned its neutral position, choosing to act against the resistance. In other words, he does not blame Iran for this shift but sees it as an unavoidable step.295

During those four months, the rebels resisted bravely from June to the end of September 1930 against the overwhelming power of the Turkish troops, according to Sasuni. The revolt spread all over Western Armenia, except Erzurum, and over the entire territory of Kurdistan. Only in Zilan 7 warplanes of the Turkish army were brought down. The fighters attacked Turkish soldiers in small groups, killing many of them, taking their arms, and retreating to their base camp on the top of the mountain. Turkish troops attacked 10,000 Kurdish fighters with 60,000 soldiers, while Sheikh Ahmed Barzani sent 5,000 horsemen296 to reinforce the revolt in Oremar. After four months, the revolt ended with the killing of 5,000 civilians and the destruction of 200 villages by the Turkish army, Sasuni mentions. In these months, economic and political situation in Turkey became worse because of tension at the international level between Iran, the USSR, and Turkey.297 Sasuni also claims political problems which the Turkish Government was facing on the international level, but in fact, the international community’s knowledge of the matter was largely based on quotes from the Turkish Cumhuriyet Newspaper.298


296 Again, these numbers are exaggerated. Neither the Kurdish rebels did have 10,000 fighters nor did Sheikh Ahmed Barzanî send 5,000 cavalries. It seems Garo Sasuni wasn’t hesitant to exaggerate the numbers, retrieved from Xoybûn and Dashnaksutium, to exemplify the extent of the resistance in Kurdistan.

297 In fact, the reality was different. As Gorgas writes regarding the Agirî resistance “[…] for different reasons Turkey, British Iraq, French Syria and, ultimately Persia concluded that the Kurdish-Armenian alliance was not beneficial for a region where stability was necessary for the consolidation of newly established states”. See; Gorgas, Jordi Tejel, ”The Last Ottoman Rogues: The Kurdish-Armenian Alliance in Syria and the New State System in the Interwar Middle East.” In: Ramazan Hakki Öztan and Alp Yenen (eds), Age of Rogues: Rebels, Revolutionaries, and Racketeers at the Frontiers of Empires, Edinburgh University Press, Edinburgh, 2021, p. 358.

298 When we read the news through New York Times (NYT) of that time, not only the given numbers and names but almost everything is copy-pasted from the Turkish Cumhuriyet Newspaper. As it is attached to the Appendices of the dissertation, on the NYT of 7th July 1930, it is written as “15,000 bandits are reported killed”. This news is a direct citation from the Cumhuriyet Newspaper, including its humiliating wit. See; Appendices,
Ihsan Nuri emphasizes the inequality between the Turkish and Kurdish sides regarding the number of troops, arms, and ammunition, and at the end of the book, he argues that if there had been even 500 fighters in Agirî, the result would have been different. Then, to describe how the Turkish army were “shocked” by the resistance, he fantastically narrates how the Mount Agirî repelled a Turkish warplane to protect “its children” from the barbarism of the Turks. Nonetheless, despite having this kind of surrealistic narratives, he is more realistic than Sasuni about the numbers of Turkish troops and Kurdish fighters.

The fighters left Mount Agirî as two groups. The first group, which included Ihsan Nuri, broke through the Turkish army’s siege at night and passed to Iran. The second group, led by Biro Heskî, reached Iran in the following day.

According to Sasuni, however, the second group, led by Biro Heskî, stayed on Mount Agirî, and confronted the Turkish army with non-stop attacks. Therefore, the Turkish army was not able to stay on Mount Agirî more than a few weeks and thus, the Kurdish fighters resettled on the mountain.

In fact, the information given by Sasuni here is totally unrealistic. Biro Heskî also left the mountain, but he did not surrender to the Iranians. He lived in the mountains in Iran for a while until he was killed by the Iranian army and its Kurdish mercenaries.

At the end of September, while the last fighters were crossing the Iranian border, the Turkish army was celebrating its victory. The Turkish newspaper Milliyeti characterized...
this situation on 19th September 1930 with a cartoon showing a grave where “the imaginary Kurdistan is buried here.”
4.2.3 The Agirî Resistance Through the Dengbêjî Narratives

To present another picture of the Agirî resistance, after the analysis of the Turkish and Kurdish written accounts, our focus will shift to the Kurdish collective memory as reflected in the kilams. These narratives will then be compared with the written accounts, to see whether their description of the people and the context of the resistance corresponds with the written accounts, or not. This analysis aims to question the received knowledge regarding the resistance, which was mostly based on written accounts.

As previously stated, from the early years of the Republican era, a strict oppression and assimilation policy was implemented in Turkey. Anything related to Kurdish identity was banned. Between 1930s and 1960s it was not possible to hear or read about the recent past of Kurds in Turkey. Meanwhile, clear pictures of past resistance and atrocities were circulated in the collective memory of Kurmanj people in Turkey via dengbêjî and kilam. Moreover, it can be observed that the most vivid and lively versions of those descriptions are situated in the Serhed region, where the Agirî resistance happened, and where the dengbêjî tradition is strongest. Therefore, it might be the case that memory of these events becomes blurred as one moves away from the center of the resistance and tradition.

A more remarkable point is the following: Although the Agirî Resistance’s press center, Xoybûn, was in Syria\textsuperscript{305} and the proclamations and publications were mostly printed and distributed there, one cannot compare the effects of these written works with the impact of kilams on the collective memory of the Kurmanj. The written texts, despite all their advantages, did not leave a mark as strong as the oral discourse did, mainly because the obvious target-group of the written discourse was the literate public. In Turkey during this period the literacy rate among Kurds was quite limited\textsuperscript{306} and there was severe repression of all things Kurdish. Unlike written texts, the kilams reached most of the people. They were handed on from region to region and from generation to generation. They overcame the various impediments put in the way of propagating Kurdish culture, because dengbêjs did not need legitimate permission, press, or technical instruments.

\begin{footnotesize}
\begin{itemize}
\item[306] As it was mentioned in the beginning of the first chapter, according to the sources of https://ourworldindata.org/literacy the rate of literacy in Turkey was 62\% in 1975. This rate was much lower among the Kurdish people since schools were only in Turkish and not so common in Kurdish areas.
\end{itemize}
\end{footnotesize}
As was discussed in the second chapter, the Serhed region was the stronghold of dengbêji tradition. The best dengbêjs came from this region. Furthermore, through the kilams, the people and events connected with the Agirî resistance are fully preserved in living memory here. This memory, moreover, is typically different from the written history. That difference is crucial to understand the collective memory of the Kurdish-Kurmanj people. From the perspective of dengbêji narratives, people who fought in Agirî belonged to certain families and tribes. They fought against the governments to protect their values, such as religion, honor, and reputation while at the same time having problems with other Kurdish tribes and families.

If we compare the oral and written sources regarding the resistance in Agirî two main differences appear:

1. The names of the foremost leaders in the written accounts and kilams are not the same.
2. The way in which people and incidents are described through the written sources and kilams are different.

Before discussing these differences in detail, I should note that this section’s analysis of selected kilams does not aim to establish pure historical truth, nor does it claim to be more truthful than the written sources. However, it illustrates the background of the collective memory of the Kurmanjs. So far, to the best of my knowledge, no study has examined the Agirî resistance based on oral traditions. The typical approach reiterates what the primary written sources have documented. As a result, this is all the literate world knows about the resistance and the fighters.

To start the comparison between written and oral sources, we may remember what contents of the relevant Turkish and Kurdish sources:

From the Turkish nationalist perspective, which is widely accepted by the academic and popular accounts in Turkey, the incidents that happened around Agirî between 1926 and 1930 were mainly security issues that were caused by banditry and the tricks of outsiders (i.e. foreign governments). According to official Turkish accounts, the Agirî Revolts were a series of small rebellions carried out by bandits and thugs -mostly without references to their ethnic identity- against the progressive Turkish government. Thus, it was essentially an issue of banditry. A few of the rebels were *kilçartığı* (lit. ‘survivors of carnage’) of the Sheikh Said Revolt. All were encouraged by outsiders.  

---

From the Kurdish nationalist perspective, led by Xoybûn, the Agîrî revolt was a national revolt for independence, and the fighters were Kurdish national heroes. The Kurdish written accounts tended to describe the resistance as a unified and organized national revolt against the colonialist Turkish Republic. Xoybûn was the leading organization of the revolt, and the Agîrî Mountain was the headquarters of the military base of the Kurdish National Army. Appointed by Xoybûn, İhsan Nuri was the commander-in-chief of the Kurdish national army of the Agîrî Kurdish Republic.

We may now examine the details of these accounts and try to list the overlapping names in the resistance:

1. The Turkish military reports indicate that:

   “In the end of 1929 the amount of the bandits consisted of 350 horsemen and 120 infantry men. They mainly belonged to the Hassas, Örenli, Şiphanlı, Haydaranlı, Milanlı, Hesenanlı, Zirkanlı, Cibrî and Mokorlu tribes and they were led by Biro Haso. Above all of them there was İhsan Nuri and the Armenian Zilan.”

From this perspective, the main roles in the Agîrî revolt were assigned to İhsan Nuri, the Armenian Zilan (Ardashes Moradian), and Biro Heskî Têllî through the military reports of the Turkish General Staff.

The documents also mention the names of Şeyh Abdulkadir (Sheikh Evdilqadir), Halis (Xalis Begê Sipkî), Ferzende (Ferzende Begê Hesenî), Şeyh Tahir (Sheikh Tahir), Şeyh Fevzi (Sheikh Feyzî) and Şimikanlı Timur (Temirê Şemkî) concerning their role in the Agîrî resistance in 1930. On the other hand, the reports of the Zilan military operation mention the names of Şeyh Zahir (Sheikh Zahir), Yusuf Abdal (Usivê Evdal), Seyid Resul (Seyîd Resûl), KörhüseyinPashaoğulları (the brothers Nadir and Meheme), and EminPashaoğulları (the brothers Bûrhan, Ebûbekir, Usman, İbrehîm and Umer).

2. In the Kurdish written accounts, the names of the leaders are the same. Like the Turkish official accounts, the main role in the Agîrî revolt was attributed to İhsan Nuri, Biro Heskî Têllî and Zilan Beg (Ardashes Moradian) by Garo Sasuni:

---

308 Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İşyanları-I, Kaynak Yayınları, 2012, İstanbul, p. 497. (Once again, I should remind that the names of the tribes are wrong. The corrected names: Hassas Örenli is Hessesori, Şiphanli is Sipkî, Haydaranlı is Heyderî, Milanlı is Milî, Hesenanlı is Hesenî, Zirkanlı is Zirkî, Cibrî and Mokorlu is Merxûrî. Moreover, except the Hessesori, Saqan and Xelikan tribes which were belong to the Celali tribal confederation; other tribes mentioned here had only some small groups or a few people in the resistance. Namely, they had not joined the revolt as whole tribes. Furthermore, the Heyderî tribes did not directly join to the resistance in Agîrî, but they started a connected revolt in Zilan. On the other hand, the Milan tribe did not join the resistance, even more, some of the Milî families were fighting against the rebels, behalf on the Iranian army.
“These three names were politically open-minded, and their aim was the independence of Kurdistan and Armenia. They had a lot of theoretical and practical experience, and they trusted in the Kurdish-Armenian alliance.”

Sasuni mentions other names such as Ferzende Beg, Adevi Aziz (Edoyê Ezîzî), Taceddin, Kamil Malhor (Kamilê Merxurî), Yusuf Redkini (Usivê Redki), Mistefa Kelo (Misteyê Kêlo), and Weli Hase Sori (Weliyê Heseşori). However, he does not give any further information about these names.

Upon the agreement between Xoybûn and Dhasnaksutiun signed on 29th October 1927, Zilan Beg (Ardashes Moradian) went to Mount Agirî and joined the revolt. However, despite having a big role in the book of Sasuni, according to the memoir of Ihsan Nuri, Zilan Beg was only an observer in Agirî. The Armenian group, which was sent by the Dashnaksutiun, consisted of Zilan Beg and four armed men. They were not involved in the clashes. Furthermore, Zilan Beg was tricked by the Soviet soldiers, arrested in the summer of 1929, and sent to Siberia. Therefore he could not have had a big role in the Agirî revolt, as we read the memoir.

On the other hand, in the memoir of Ihsan Nuri, the main role is given to Ihsan Nuri himself and Biro Heskî Têllî. He was the appointed Commander-in-Chief of the Kurdish forces in Agirî by Xoybûn while Biro Heskî Têllî was the appointed governor of Agirî.

Regarding the Agirî revolt, many other people like Emerê Besê, Elo Beço, Seyîd Resûl, Temirê Şemki, the sons of Kor Huseyn Pasha, and Sheikh Evdilqadir are mentioned in the memoir of Ihsan Nuri. However, the main roles, after Ihsan Nuri and Biro Heski Têllî, are attributed to Ferzende Beg, Xalis Beg, and Edoyê Ezîzî. Furthermore, these three people, alongside their small groups, were almost the only remaining fighters after the Amnesty Law of the Turkish government in 1928.

Thus, the main roles and names given by the Turkish General Staff, Garo Sasuni, and Ihsan Nuri, results in two groups each consisting of three names.

---


310 Interestingly, we do not hear the name of any sheikh who had involved into the resistance from Sasuni. It looks that he has simply ignored the religious people in the resistance!

311 Garo Sasuni revealed the name of Zilan Beg in 1969, in the second edition of his book, and told that Zilan Beg was Ardashes Moradian, an Armenian from Xiûs-Erzirom Turk: Hims-Erzerum).


The first group consists of Biro Heskî Têllî, Ihsan Nuri and Zîlan Beg (Ardashes Moradian). Hence, it might be expected that these three names would be remembered as the foremost names of the resistance in the Kurdish-Kurmanj society, but this is not so. Significantly, there does not seem to be a single kilam that mentions these men in connection with the Agîrî resistance. Even though Biro Heskî Têllî was a local person who was known, at least, by his own circle, there is no well-known kilam about him and his role in the resistance. His name is only mentioned in a kilam which tells of the killings of the three sons of Kor Huseyin Pasha (Ûsîv, Efît, Silêman) while they were trying to reach Mount Agîrî. The name of Biro Heskî is just mentioned there as being on the Mount Agîrî.

Similarly, although he is prominently mentioned by the written sources, there is not a single word in any kilam about Ihsan Nuri and Ardashes Moradian. Ardashes Moradian was from Xinûs, a district of Erzirom (Turk: Erzurum) and perhaps he was not famous among local people. Plus, he did not stay on the mountain for a long time. So, it is understandable that he was not known by the society. However, Ihsan Nuri was from the Cibiran tribe, and he was also known in the region due to his ex-military status in the Turkish army. He was a gendarme commander in the Agîrî region before being sent to Beyt-ul Şebab district of Hekarî (Turk: Hakkâri), in 1924, and he was known to the local notables. Nonetheless, we do not hear his name through kilams.

The reasons why these three names do not appear to exist in the collective memory of the society may be a topic for further research. However, we may question if they really had such an important role in the resistance, or if the resistance was as big as imagined, how is it possible that there is no trace in the collective memory regarding these three people?

Since these names do not have a place in the collective memory, it is very reasonable to assume their reputations are mostly attributed to them by written accounts only. It appears that due to the lack of written history of Kurmanj people, the few available written accounts have become the main discourse in terms of influencing the following accounts.

Since these three names do not exist in kilams, they will be left aside from the comparison in this part of the study. Instead, the chapter will focus on the other three names

---

314 In contrast, we hear the names of some Turkish military commanders such as Nidayî Beg and Dewrêş Beg through certain kilams. These two names exist both on the Turkish and Kurdish written accounts as the lower rank military officers. Furthermore, some foremost Kurdish militias such as Hemê Hečî Efî and Sheikh Taho are mentioned in kilams regarding their negative roles in the resistance. Both the military officers and the militias are memorized with their cruelties by the society.

315 Similarly, despite being given a main role by the Kurdish and Turkish written accounts we do not hear any single word about Xoybûn and its intellectual cadres in the Kurdish-Kurmanj collective memory. There is any kilam, even any word about the organization in any kilam regarding their role in the Agîrî resistance.
which are very well known through kilams. Examining the names based on the kilams will offer more information about the people, society, values, and general perception of that time.

These three names stem from the second group mentioned in the written accounts: Ferzende Begê Hesenî, Xalis Begê Sipkî, and Edoyê Ezîzî. All three joined the resistance with their armed groups within a couple of months from the time when Biro Heskî Têllî started a resistance in Mount Agîrî in the spring of 1926. Furthermore, they were the only remaining group leaders on Mount Agîrî after the Amnesty Law of the Turkish government came into force in 1928. While they are listed as secondary level leaders in the written sources, in the collective memory they are portrayed as the main fighters.

When we look at these three people, we see that all of them are tribal fighters who were Sunni Muslims, and all of them had been in the ranks of the Ottoman Hamidiye Regiments prior to the Turkish Republic. They also fought in the Ottoman army during the 1st World War against the Russian troops.

In the following section three kilams will be analyzed to gain a better understanding of the differences between written accounts and collective memory regarding the Agîrî resistance and its foremost fighters, their aims and values, and the social context which they originated in. These are:

1. Kilama Ferzende Beg
2. Kilama Xalis Beg
3. Kilama Edoyê Ezîzî

It should be noted that the texts were committed to writing based on only a few performances and may have minor differences from other performances. As stated before, in

---

316 I should note that the name of Edoyê Ezîzî does not exist on the military reports of the Turkish General Staff, but he is known by Kurmanj people via narratives. Especially, if we consider that Edoyê Ezîzî was not a notable person, for example, a beg, sheikh, or an agha and killed during infighting by his fellows in 1928 it is possible that the Turkish authorities had no information about him. It is also possible that he was known with another name by the Turkish authorities. However, the most interesting point is the approach of Kurdish accounts to ignore the assassination of Edoyê Ezîzî. Except the book of Ahmed Aras, even today, there is not a known written account which mentions Edoyê Ezîzî’s death. The reason of this ignorance is perhaps its contradiction with the imagined national struggle and unity. Since most of these accounts are tended to analyze the Agîrî Resistance as a unified/national revolt, they do not want or cannot add the story of Edoyê Ezîzî to the main picture.


318 Hamidiye Regiments were built in 1891 and were sustained until the end of the Ottoman Empire. Most of the regiments were comprised mainly to the Kurds. The main reasons for making these regiments were to control Kurdish communities via a hierarchical discipline; and use them as a strong military force against Russian troops. However, we should note that the Kurdish tribes were sending troops to the Ottoman Army before the era of the Hamidiye Regiments as well. Peter Lerch had published some Kurmanji and Zazaki texts in 1856 after making some research among the Kurdish war detainees of the Ottoman army, in Smolensk. See: Leezenberg Michiel; Soviet Kurdology and Kurdish Orientalism; in The Heritage of Soviet Oriental Studies; Ed. Michael Kemper and Stephan Conerman; Routledge, London, 2011.
the section of “Performance of Kilams” each repetition of a kilam slightly differs from the previous one even if the dengbêj is the same.

The kilams are listed here according to their popularity. Besides the local people in Serhed, most of the Kurmanj people have heard of the name of Ferzende Beg since his kilam has been told by the foremost dengbêjs Reso and Şakiro. The fact that he joined both the Sheikh Said and Agirî rebellions is another reason of the fame of Ferzende Begê Hesenî.

The second kilam is about Xalis Begê Sipkî, who was known mostly among people in Serhed. Since Xalis Beg became involved in Turkish politics in 1950s, and because this kilam has been told by the foremost dengbêj Şakiro, it is also known to some Kurmanjs outside of the Serhed region.

The last kilam is about Edoyê Ezîzî. Not only the kilam but even his name is known only in Serhed region, generally among elderly people. This kilam has not been performed by any foremost dengbêj. Edoyê Ezîzî was not a notable person prior to his revolt, nor did he have a title such as beg or agha. This is also a probable reason why he was killed by his fellows during infighting as will be discussed in the next pages. The fact that he was killed before the main phase of the Agirî resistance, probably in late 1928, is another reason why he is less well known than Ferzende Beg and Xalis Beg.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Kilama Ferzende Beg by Dengbêj Şakiro[^319]</th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>
| **Aghao hey li min hey li min, li min, li min, Wey maqulo hey li min hey li min li min, Asiyayê bi sê dengan bang dikirê digo de lê lê Besrayê,** | **O my lord, O my, O my, O my, O my**  
**The wise man, O my, O my, O my**  
**Asiya[^320] called out three times, saying**  
**‘Besra,’[^321] the poor mother, it is morning.**  
**We have had a clash,**  
**A fight occurred, at the ruins of the town,**  
**In the court of the ruins of Mirtûman, wish I die,**  
**On the water spring since the evening,**  
**Let us witness it, today.**  
**Today, since the God-given evening, the**  
**bangs of the automatic weapon of this cruel**  
**enemy, and the voices of the rifle barrel are**  
**coming,**  
**It is Persian, the fifth sect (i.e., Shi’ites), the**  
**mad enemy, and peppering bullets on us, as**  
**if it is storm-hailing,**  
**These cruel enemies are mad, let’s witness,**  
**damn it, they don’t even allow us to breathe**  
**for a second.**  
**Besra called out three times, saying:**  
**Ferzende, damn you, you were saying ‘I am**  
**Ferzende,**  
**I am the father of Elfesiya, the rider of**  |
| **Dayê rebenê sibe ye şereka li me çêbû,**  
**Qaleka li me gewimi li şûna kavîli şar e,**  
**Li hewşa kavîli Mirtûmanê wey la li min nemayê**  
**Tu sêyr bike îro ji èvar de li ser kaniyê.** | **(math)***iyo ji évara xwedê da tê gurmîna tomoštîka vê zalimê nemînim sewta vê boriyê,*  
**Ecem e, bèşincî mezheb e, dîn û dîjmin e,**  
**gulan dibarêne bi ser serê me da fenanî tawiyê,**  
**Van zaliman dîn û dajmin in de tu seyr bike malxerabo li me biriye nade me tu mohletê dege û saniyê.**  
**Besrayê bi sê dengan bang dikir digo**  
**Ferzende mala te xerabe, te digo ez Ferzende me, ez Ferzende me,**  
**Ez bavê Elfesiya, sûwarê Eznawûr im,** | **(math)***Ècêm e, bèşîncî mezheb e, û dîn û dîjmin e,**  
**gûlan dibarêne bi ser serê û dêjîmin e,**  
**vî zalîmê nemînim sewta û bûrîyê,**  
**Van zaliman dîn û dajîmin in de tu seyr bike**  
**malxerabo li me biriye nade me tu mohletê dege û saniyê.**  
**Besrayê called out three times, saying:**  
**Ferzende, damn you, you were saying ‘I am**  
**Ferzende,**  
**I am the father of Elfesiya, the rider of**  |

---

[^319]: Kilama Ferzende Beg was first told by dengbêj Reso, then by dengbêj Şakiro. Both versions in different varieties are available on YouTube. I had this kilam in my private collection in the early 1990s. Since Şakiro’s version is longer, completed, and the sound quality is higher, it is used in this study.

[^320]: Asiya is the mother of Ferzende Beg. All the names in this narrative were confirmed by Ahmed Aras during my interviews with him.

[^321]: Besra is the wife of Ferzende Beg.
Eznawur,\textsuperscript{322} the owner of a \textit{kuçıkçaplî},\textsuperscript{323} and there is no man braver than me in the region of the Fourth Army (of Turkish Republic)’.

(Ferzende) said: Besra, may your house be set on fire,

I have been wounded by a couple of bullets of the automatic (gun) of this cruel enemy,

This is neither the clash of Hesenan, nor the clash of Heyderan or Cibiran, nor the clash of twelve families of the tribes,

At the ruins of Mirtûman, it is the Persian, the fifth sect, the unbelievers who have no faith,

There are the reports of batteries and the bangs of automatic guns over our heads,

It cuts off our breath and does not give us a break even for a second,

It has been opposed to Mohammad’s Sharia for some time,

Since the evening, it is demanding and challenging me.

Today, since the God-given evening, I have been wounded by a couple of bullets of automatic (gun) of this cruel enemy,

The dead body of Silêmanê Ehmed,\textsuperscript{324} who is from the group of Hesenan, is (laying on the

\textsuperscript{322} Eznawur is the name of the horse of Ferzende Beg.

\textsuperscript{323} The word “\textit{kuçıkçaplî}” is borrowed from Turkish for a type of gun.
Heyfa min nayê bi kuştina Silêmanê Ehmed (ji) komê Hesenan e
Heyfa min tê li wê heyfé ji évara xwedê da li qarşî min ji milan vekirine rutbe û nîşan û alametên Hemîdiyê.

Lo Aghao, wele nabî, bile nabî
Şer giran e, Keremê QolAghasî mêrekê mêrxas e bi sê guleyan birîndar e, tê kuştinê tu car û tu zemana jê venabî, Cewabeka nebixêr hatî, dibê ûro sê roj û sê şev e erz û eyalê mala Umer li kavîlê wiran e, li ser piştê mane gazi nabine, sitar tunine lê peyabî,

Esker em bin, esker em bin,
Em berxê mala Umer bin, qaçaxê Romê bin, fitarê dewletê bin,
Kerem digote Evdal, digo em du peyayê mala Mistefa Agha bi tayê, bi tenê bin,
Berxê mala Evdalanê Mistê bin, bi maleka mînanî mala Umerê Gulê ji xwe ra bi heval bin,
Sêyr bike li me û li vê zulmê
Çar tûxayên Qeceran û Sêrbazan û Papaxgenî,
Derê qonaxan li me bigrin, wa her du malên ground) in front of my eyes,

I am not lamenting for the killing of Silêmanê Ehmed, who is from the group of Hesenan,
I am lamenting because they have removed the medals and emblems of the Hamidiya Army from his shoulders.

O agha, it is not acceptable, I swear, it is not acceptable,
It is a heavy clash, Keremê Qolaghasî, who is a very brave man, is wounded with three bullets, and about to die,
Bad news heard that Umer’s family has no help, and no place and shelter to take refuge for three days and nights.

We are the fighters, we are the fighters,
We are the lambs of family of Umer, and the fugitives and escapees of the Turkish State,
Kerem said Evdal “the two of us are all the men of Mistefa Agha’s family,
The lambs of the family of Evdalê Mistê, the allies of the family of Umerê Gulî,
Let us see and witness this cruelty,
Four brigades of Qajars, Sarbazs, and Papaks are telling us to shut the gates of the

---

324 Silêmanê Ehmed is the father of Ferzende Beg.

325 Kerem Beg is a notable of Zirkan tribe. He was a Kol Aghasi in the ranks of Ottoman-Hamidiye Regiments.

326 Lamb here does not simply mean a baby sheep. In the Kurdish-Kurmanji cultural context it refers to young men of the family. It also refers to be ready to sacrifice oneself for one’s community.
| Gulî bi xwe ra, | mansions, leave the two families of Gulî, lay down our arms, and surrender to their troops. |
| Dibêjin lawo tifingê destên xwe daynin, | O shoot, o fathers of my father, lets shoot |
| teslîmî çêligên me bin. | Make your rifles ready, and put the stocks of the Martinies and çaplîs onto the floor, |
| È de lêyî, lêxin bavê bavê mino, de lêxin | We have been the escapees and fugitives from the Turkish State for a long time, |
| Sustema ji hustiyên xwe da bînin, qondaxê | We are the lambs of the family of Umer, |
| marîniyan û çapliyan li erdêxin, | And our children and adults are the followers and devotees of the family of the Sheikh, since they know themselves. |
| Ê de lêyî, lêxin bavê bavê mino, de lêxin | O agha, O my, O my, O my |
| Sustema ji hustiyên xwe da bînin, qondaxê | Asiya called out three times, saying, “Besra, the poor mother, it is morning, we have had a clash, |
| marîniyan û çapliyan li erdêxin, | A conflict happened to us at the ruins of the town, in the court of the ruins of Mirtûman, it is still going on, |
| Ê de lêyî, lêxin bavê bavê mino, de lêxin | I saw that the bird of death was circling above the head of Silêmanê Ehmed since the evening, who is from the group of Hesenan, |
| Sustema ji hustiyên xwe da bînin, qondaxê | Believe me, it is a big crowd, a heavy clash, |
| marîniyan û çapliyan li erdêxin, | Asiya said, “Besra, the poor mother, |
| piçûk û mezinen me rabûne ranebûne, | |
| Murîd û canfidayê mala Şêx in bego. | |
| È Aghao hey li min, hey li mi, li min | |
| Asiyayê bi sê dengan bang dikirî digo de lê, lê, lê Besrayê, | |
| Dayê rebenê sibe ye şereka li me çêbû | |
| Qaleka li me gewimî li şûna kavili şar e, li hewşa kavilê Mirtûman dayê rebenê wa digere, | |
| Min dî teyrê ecelê ji êvar da li ser serê | |
| Silêmanê Ehmed (ji) komê Hesenan ji êvar da tev digere | |
| Bawer bike qelebalix e yeqîn şer e | |
| Asiyayê digote Besrayê dayê dayê dergûşa | |

327 The two families of Gulî are the families of Umerê Gulî whom Ferzende Beg is also a member of it. In the narrative, as the allies of the family of Umer, Kerem and Evdal assure that they are not going to leave those two families and surrender to the Iranian forces not to be killed.

328 In the daily usage of Kurmanji, calling someone as “my father” mostly refers to show respect to them although the same word may be used cynically in a different context. Saying “father of my father” means to express double respect as it is done in this kilam.

329 Martini and çaplî are used words to name different guns. Martini is a British gun brand. Capli is a Turkish word. It is not clear that referring which exact brand of gun.

330 Sheikh refers to Sheikh Said, the religious leader of Kurdish uprising in 1925.
میله تی لالین، تو بی دسته الفسیا بیرجه ی جنگ دیر کودکه‌ی تو،

گو لدیه رنه جی یانگ نه یوگ انتخب تو جی یانگ نرا دیوژی گوتینه‌ی تو،

بلا دیرگوشی میله بین لی دوره لهدگی نشو مالا عمر، هر دا پی‌این مالا مسطفا آگه ته وی بیرجره،

بزرگی بی سه دنگن بانگ دیکی دیگو فرزند مالا یانگی تو دی گو وی او طریکه،

ای بیاه غائری کوچیک‌کپلیه مالا، لی وله ددا بذورکی ولای متر دی سر مین ره چت تونو،

گو بزرگی ایبیز کولیه دی چاپیه تو کت، وز بیا بیا گول تومتیکا وی زالیمی بیرندار این،

سینقاژ سلیمانه احمد کومه هسنان لی پش چاو مین،

وا نه یشک هسنان این، نه یشک هیدرمان این،

نه یشک سیبران این، نه یشک دونزده بیاه اشیران این،

هیوشا کاولیه میرتونمان این، ام این، بیشین بیچر مهیب این، بی دین أبیه ایمان این،

لی سر یشک مه هرمنه توانگ دی گیرگیرا تومتیکان وی مکنلییان این،

لی مه بیریه دی چو سند نده مالا دا تو مولهت وی تو امان این،

جی گاوا دین دا لی گارشی یشیریتا مه‌مهد

the baby in your arms is a boy, let’s take the hand of Elfesiya and leave the battlefield.”

She (Asiya, the poor mother) answered and said, “Have you no shame that you say those kinds of words to me,

Let me sacrifice my baby before the feet of the family of Umer, and those two men of the family of Mistefa Agha.”

Besra called out three times, saying

“I am the father of Elfesiya, the rider of Eznawur, the owner of the kuçikçaplı, and there is no one braver than me in the region of the Fourth Army (of Turkish Republic).”

(Ferzende) said “Besra, may your house be set on fire, I have been wounded by a couple of bullets of the automatic (gun) of this cruel (enemy),

The dead body of Sılëmanê Ehmed, from the group of Hesenan, is laying (on the ground) before my eyes,

This is neither a clash of the Hesenan, nor the clash of the Heyderan or Cibiran, nor the clash of the twelve families of the tribes,

At the ruins of Mirtûman, it is the Persian, the fifth sect, which is a faithless infidel.

There are reports of batteries and the bangs of automatic guns above our heads,

It does not let us breathe or to take a break even for a second,
sekiniye, tu seyr bike ji min ra dixwîne meydan û ferman e.

Cinyazê Silêmanê Ehmed (ji) komê Hesenan li pêş çavê min e,
Heyfa min nayê li kuştina Silêmanê Ehmed (ji) komê Hesenan e,
Heyfa min tê li wê heyfê ji gava din da dikim û nakim tiliya min a eşhedê ji xwe ra li min nagere.

Lo Aghao wele nabî, bile nabî
Şer giran e Keremê QolAghasî méréki mërxas e bi sê guleyan birîndar e, tê kuştinê tu carî tu zemanan jê venabî,
Cewabeka nebijêr hatiye, dibê îro sê roj û sê şev e, erz û eyalê mala Umer li kaviliya wêran e ser piştê mane, gazî nabîne, sitar tunîne lê peyabî.

Esker em bin, esker em bin
Em berxê mala Umer bin, qaçaxê Romê bin, fîrarê dewletê bin,

Kerem digote Evdal, digo em du peyayên mala Mistefa Agha, bi tayê, bi tenê bin,
Berxê mala Evdalê Mistê bin, bi malekî mina mala Umerê Gulî ji xwe ra bi heval bin,
Seyr bike li me û li vê zulmê çar tuxayên Qeceren û Sêrbazan û Papaxgenî,
Derê qonaxanli me bgirin wan her du malên

It has been opposed to Mohammad’s Sharia for some time,
Since the evening, it is demanding and challenging me.

The dead body of Silêmanê Ehmed, who is from the group of Hesenan, is laying (on the ground) before my eyes,
I am not sorry for the killing of Silêmanê Ehmed, who is from the group of Hesenan
I am sorry that my forefinger is not moving for the Confession of Faith since some time ago. 331

O agha, I swear, it is not acceptable,
It is a heavy clash, Keremê Qolaghasî, who is a very brave man, is wounded by three bullets, and he is dying,
There came the bad news that Umer’s family has no help, and no place and shelter to refuge for three days and nights.

Let us be the fighters, let us be the fighters,
We are the lambs of Umer's family, the fugitives, and escapees from the Turkish State,
Kerem spoke to Evdal, saying, “let us two be the only men of Mistefa Agha’s family,
The lambs of the family of Evdalê Mistê, the allies of family of Umerê Gulî,

Look at ourselves and at this cruelty:

331 In the Islamic belief, while doing shahadat the forefinger of right hand must be moved up. Especially while dying to move the forefinger up and to utter kalima-i shahadat is important for a Muslim person. In this kilam, Ferzende is wailing since he cannot move his forefinger to complete this ritual while he is about to die.
**Gulî bi xwe ra,**  
*Dibêjin lawo, tifîngên destên xwe daynin teslimî çeligên me bin.*

**Ê de lêxin bavê bavê mino de lêxin**

**Sustema ji hustiyê xwe deynin, qundaxê martîniyan û çapliyan li erdêxin,**

**Em hene ji berî û paş da qaçaxê Romê ne,**  
*fîrarê dewletê ne,**  
*Berxê mala Umer in, piçûk û mezinên me rabûne ranebûne,*  
*Murîd û canfedayê mala Şêx in bego.*

Four brigades of Qajars, Sarbazs, and Papaks are telling us to shut the gates of the mansions, leave the two wounded families, lay down our arms, and surrender to their troops.

O let us shoot, o fathers of my father, let us shoot,

Let’s make our arms ready, and put the stocks of the *Martinies* and *Kuçikçaplis* onto the floor,

We have been escapees and fugitives from the Turkish State for a long time.

We are the lambs of the family of Umer,  
Our children and adults have been faithful followers of family of the Sheikh, since they know themselves.
Ferzende Begê Hesenî is the son of Silêmanê Ehmed from the Hesenan tribe. In this kilam, the clash between the escapees of the Sheikh Said revolt and the Iranian army is narrated from the mouth of Ferzende Beg, his mother Asiya, and his wife Besra.

After the establishment of the Turkish Republic in 1923, when it became clear that there was no place for Kurdish people under the new regime such as there had been before, Ferzende Beg was one of the people who radically turned away and joined the rebellion of Sheikh Said in 1925. He was the leader of the rebel group which took control in the town of Milazgîr (Tur: Malazgirt) while his uncle Xalid Begê Hesenî led an attack to control the center of Mûş (Tur: Muş) province. After the revolt was defeated, Ferzende Beg made his way to Iran, fighting both the pro-Turkish Kurds and the Iranian military forces. Within a couple of years, he had been wounded and jailed, then, returned to Agîrî to join the resistance. When the Amnesty Law was announced by the Turkish side in 1928, Ferzende Beg was one of the few people who refused to surrender. He was radically opposed to the new regime.

After the defeat of the Agîrî resistance Ferzende Beg did not give up and did not surrender to the Iranian regime either. Therefore, he became a target of the Iranian government. In 1931 he was wounded again in a clash with the Iranian military forces and jailed in the Kajar prison. He died or was killed there in 1936.

In the Kilama Ferzende Beg, the main reason for the conflict is the intention of the Iranian army to disarm the defeated rebels. The fighters, who consider arms as their only guarantee of survival, were reluctant to surrender their arms.

The clash, which is mentioned here happened in 1925, in the Kurdish region of Iran between the fighters who survived after the Sheikh Said rebellion and the Iranian army backed by the Turkmen militias. In this clash, the father of Ferzende Beg, Silêmanê Ehmed and a notable of the Zirkan tribe, Kerem Beg, were killed. Both had been in the ranks of the Hamidiye regiments before the fall of Ottoman Empire. Ferzende Beg was injured in this clash and then jailed for four months in Iran.

However, it can also be seen in this kilam that, in the collective memory of the Kurmanj, Ferzende Beg is not a national figure. Contrary to the Kurdish written accounts, Ferzende Beg is never mentioned in connection with the national struggle, although he was a very brave tribal rebel against the Turkish Republic.

This kilam clearly reveals the identities, motivations, values, and beliefs of the Kurdish fighters who belonged to different tribes and families. The main part of the rebel group who fought with Iranian soldiers consisted of the Hesenan tribe, to which Ferzende Beg also belonged. There were also family members of Sheikh Said in the group.
Of course, when viewed from the outside or from the viewpoint of today, all those who fought against the Iranian army were Kurds and the conflict happened after a Kurdish revolt. So, it may seem plausible to represent them as Kurdish national rebels who were fighting for Kurdish independence. However, this anachronistic approach ignores characteristics of the society of that period, which was dominated by kinship rather than other social-political frameworks.

The Kurdish-Kurmanj society consisted of tribes and families, and the idea of being a nation was not common. Even during the revolts, tribes and families sided with the government or rebels, according to their own priorities.

As we see in this case, after the defeat of the Sheikh Said revolt, while Sheikh Elî Riza, the son of Sheikh Said, and some of the Hesenan tribesmen, including Ferzende Beg, were trying to escape to Iran, other Kurdish tribesmen from the Keskoî and Celalî tribes tried to prevent them from crossing the border around Mount Tendurek. Biro Heskî Têllî, who later became famous in the Agîrî resistance, led the group that fought on behalf of the Turkish government. However, they failed to prevent the fighters, in this and after some small clashes the group crossed the border and passed to Iran.332

However, in Iran too, they could not avoid a further clash since they were forced to disarm by the Iranian soldiers.

For the people who had been engaged in an armed struggle with the Turkish government since the beginning of 1925 and who had troubles with different Kurdish tribes and families for decades, the possession of arms was the only guarantee to survive. Therefore, they refused to surrender and engaged in a clash.

The Kilama Ferzende Beg is a narrative from the center of such a tension. The fighters were besieged by the Iranian army and Turkmen militia (Karapapak) and they were asked to give up their arms and surrender.

---

332 Ihsan Nuri claims that while the group was trying to escape to Iran, Kor Huseyn Pasha had tried to prevent them in favor of the Turkish government but finally, after a week, they were able to cross the border. Paşa, Ihsan Nuri, Ağrı Dağı İsyanı, Med Yay., Istanbul,1996, p. 65. On the other hand, Kemal Süphandağ, the grandchild of Kor Huseyn Pasha argues that the incident happened at the Tendurek Mountain, namely, out of the territory of Kor Huseyn Pasha. See; IMC TV, Dirok, Part:37. However, in another part of the same TV program, citing from the son of Biro Heskî Tellî, Cemal Kutlay claims that Biro Heskî and Kor Huseyn Pasha were together in that case, and they tried to block the way of the fighters to escape to Iran. See; IMC TV, Dirok, Special Program with Cemal Kutlay. Likewise, some other sources claim that Kor Huseyn Pasha was not directly involved in this issue, but he had warned the group not to pass from his territory. So, the group had to pass from a longer way, and had trouble in Tendurek while Biro Heskî Têllî and some Celalî tribesmen tried to prevent them to escape to Iran.
In this kilam, the narrative is radically different from written accounts as regards the society, the fight, and the people mentioned. It clearly shows what seemed significant to the Kurdish-Kurmanj people of that time, namely:

1. Tribal and familial values.
2. Religion, notably the values of Sunni-Islam.³³³

The way Ferzende Beg is portrayed in the kilam is also quite different from his description in the Kurdish and Turkish written accounts. Despite his involvement in the Sheikh Said rebellion and being one of the foremost fighters of the Agîrî resistance a few years later, one does not hear about the Kurdish identity of Ferzende Beg through the kilam. He is a brave fighter of Hesenan tribe, particularly Mala Umer, and a loyal follower of Sheikh Said.

Moreover, apart from a few intellectuals of the Agîrî Resistance, such as Ihsan Nuri, almost all people were far removed from having dreams of nationhood. They had different motivations for rebelling against the Turkish government. Also, some of the leading figures had personal or family troubles with others.

Additionally, most of them acted as they used to do in past clashes with tribes or families. Although they had become part of a social struggle in Agîrî, they were continuously seeking revenge for old grudges from their traditional rivals. One of the methods of revenge was talan,³³⁴ meaning looting. Looting was a traditional way of getting revenge among Kurds and sometimes it was committed by people in the resistance against their traditional enemies as well. Ihsan Nuri complained that he was trying to stop looting but he failed.³³⁵

Furthermore, the tribes and families usually determined their position based on the identity of their traditional rivals. Tribes sided with the resistance or the government according to the attitude of their traditional rivals. Since there was not a common idea of Kurdish identity among people, they were mainly seeking for familial or tribal benefits. It was similar for the families who belonged to the same tribe which had troubles with other

---

³³³ Although the most of Muslim-Kurds are belong to the Sunni sect, there are Shia-Kurds in Iran and in a few regions in Turkey.

³³⁴ Talan (looting) traditionally had some specific meanings among Kurds.1. It was an economical revenue for some people, especially for people who were fugitives; 2. It consisted of harassment and humiliation especially between the tribal rivals; 3. It was a kind of challenge to show braveness to their enemies.

³³⁵ As Cemal Kutlay emphasizes that this was a “side effect” of the resistance which started as a simple non-political reaction against the government, then, included some traditional looters while growing, and then, gained a political aspect after 1928. See; IMC TV, Dîrok, Special Program with Cemal Kutlay.
relatives. Tribes consist of several families, some of whom sided with the Turkish government as their rival family supported the resistance, or vice versa. As Ahmed Aras shows in the case of the Sipkan tribe, one of whose notables was Xalis Beg, while he was in the resistance, some tribe members were involved in the Zilan massacre on behalf of the Turkish government.

Additionally, some tribes were fighting with each other even in the middle of the resistance while the Turkish army were besieging Mount Agirî and massacring people in the Zilan valley.

Since most of the Kurdish-Kurmanj society of that period gave priority to its tribal values, everything was evaluated in the light of tribal or religious considerations. The clash with the Iranian army is described in a similar way through the words of Ferzende Beg, one of the leading figures of the resistance.

In this kilam, the enemy is not primarily perceived as a national foe, but as a religious unbeliever, given that the Iranians were Shi’ites while the Kurdish fighters were Sunnis. Moreover, the fighters considered themselves as a part of a tribe/family which engaged in various conflicts, and they compare this clash to other familial/tribal ones which they were involved in.

| Eva ne şerê Hesenan e, ne şerê Heyderan e, ne şerê Cibiran e, ne şerê donzdeh bavê eşîran e. | This is neither the clash of Hesenan, nor the clash of Heyderan, nor the clash of Cibiran, nor the clash of the twelve families of tribes |

In other words, the clash with the Iranian army is not compared to a Kurdish anti-government revolt, but to a much closer social reality: clashes among tribes and families.

---

336 In Kurdish it is called malbat and refers different families in a tribe. An important point here is distinguishing the role and structure of tribes in Kurdish communities. Contrary to the common belief, tribalism is not so much strong and hierarchical among Kurds, and tribes are usually a kind of familial confederal entities. In this structure, the head of tribe usually does not have a power to command to all members as he wants, or to do everything that he wants. What I mean is that Kurdish tribes do not have solid hierarchical structures which are under the command of the head of tribes. For further information see, footnote number 39.


338 Between 1928 and 1930 the troubles and clashes were going on between the Saqan and Qoton tribes, and between Geloyî and Qizilbaşoxî tribes. All of them were belonging to the Celali tribal confederation but for example since the Saqan tribe had re-joined the revolt in 1929, the Qoton tribe had sided with the Turkish government. This kind of troubles among the Kurmanj tribes was a good opportunity for the Turkish government to weakening the resistance because the rival tribes were voluntarily fighting on behalf of the government against the others. See; Hun, Mücahit Özden, Iğdır ve Ağrı Dağı İsyani, Alter Yay., Ankara, 2019, pp. 46-68.
Moreover, there was an alliance between the Sunni Kurmanjs and Sunni Ottoman regime, and this alliance is a source of pride in the kilam:

| Heyfa min nayê bi kuşîna Silêmanê Ehmed komê Hesenan e, | I am not lamenting the killing of Silêmanê Ehmed, who is from the group of Hesenan, |
| Heyfa min tê li wê heyfê ji êvara xwedê da li qarşî min ji milan vekirine rutbe û nîşan û alametên Hemîdiyê. | I am lamenting because they removed the medals and emblems of the Hamidiye army from his shoulders. |

The kilam indicates that the concept of a Kurdish national identity did not exist for the speakers and the audience at that time, or at least did not play a major role in their worldview. In contrast, the speakers’ pride is based on their role as a part of the Hamidiye regiments in the late Ottoman era. Two people who were killed, Silêmanê Ehmed and Keremê Zirkî, who had been commanders in the Hamidiye Army, are described in the kilam as wearing their Hamidiye uniforms. Moreover, their killing is not regarded as a humiliation, but the removal of their Ottoman medals and emblems from their dead bodies is. In the Kurdish context, the term *Rom* refers to the Turkish-dominated states from the Seldjucks, via the Ottomans to the Turkish Republic. However, in this kilam it specifically refers to the Turkish Republic which was proclaimed in 1923. Since the Ottomans were Muslim and the *Khalifa* (a key function of the Ottoman Emperor) was the father of all Muslim people, the relationship between the Ottoman regime and Sunni Kurds was totally distinct from the relationship between the latter and the Turkish Republic, which claimed to be secular. So, the fighters are proud to have been a part of the Ottoman state while they are the enemies of the new Republic.

Thus, being a part of the Hamidiye regiments and having medals and emblems from the Ottomans – rather than being Kurd or struggling for a Kurdish cause – is a source of pride, which shows that a common concept of a Kurdish identity did not exist yet. The Kurmanj people had joined the Kurdish Sheikh Said revolt, but their motivation was mainly religious rather than ethnic. Being Kurmanj was just a fact but fighting for it had not started yet.

In this worldview, apart from the personal lives of the fighters, the Kurdish nation, or even the existence of their tribes or families are not in danger, whereas the true religion of Mohammad is. As was said earlier the aggressor belonged to another branch of Islam, the Shia, as is also seen in the following lines:
Ecem e, bêşincî mezheb e, bê dîn û bê îman e. It is Persian, the fifth ‘sect’ (*mazhab*), which is an infidel without faith.

Gavê din da li qarşî şerîeta Miheimer sekiniye tu seyr bike ji êvar da ji min ra dixwîne meydan û ferman e. It has been opposed to Mohammad’s Sharia for some time. Since the evening, it is demanding and challenging me.

Islam and its Sunni branch determines alliances and enmities. Consequently, the enemy is not portrayed as a national enemy fighting against the Kurdish people. It is religious, being related to a different branch of Islam. Referring to the fact that Iranians are mostly Shi’ites and although the Shi’a is one of two main branches of Islam, in the kilam, it is described as the “fifth mazhab”, and considered out of the religion. This was the common belief of the society of that time. Sect appeared as a connector or separator.

Following a mighty sheikh and being devoted to a religion was a great motivational source for the rebels. In the kilam, the emphasis on being *fedayîn* (Ing.: devotees) of the family of the Sheikh can be considered as examples of this motivation.

Em hene ji berî û paş da qaçaxê Romê ne, We are the escapees and fugitives of the Turkish State since the past, firarê dewletê ne and the lambs of the family of Umer, Berxê mala Umer in, piçûk û mezinên me Our children and adults have been followers rabûne ranebûne of family of Sheikh Since they know Murîd û canfedayê mala Şêx in bego. themselves

“Mala Sheikh” refers to the family of Sheikh Said who was sentenced to death by the Turkish government for leading the Kurdish rebellion in 1925. The kilam reminds one that those fighting people were the followers of Sheikh Said even before the rebellion and the establishment of the Turkish Republic. Furthermore, being followers of Sheikh Said was the

| Footnote | 339 The Sunni order of Islam has four accepted *mazhabs*, or legal schools: Shafii, Hanafi, Malaki, and Hanbali. | 340 However, contrary to the common belief of recent years, Sheikh Said was not known/remembered as a Kurdish leader by ordinary Kurds. People knew him as a leader who sacrificed himself for Islam. I have heard about him in the same way in my childhood. We just learned from our parents that he was killed by the Turkish government because of defending Islam. |
main motivation to join the rebellion. Despite having failed in the rebellion there isn’t any sign of remorse in the kilam. Being the *fedayîn* of Mala Sheikh is their main and determining choice.

Briefly, in the Kilama Ferzende Beg, contrary to the written Turkish accounts which label the rebels as bandits and thugs, and the Kurdish accounts portraying them as national heroes, the rebels are identified within their own values which consist of two main points: tribal/familial and religious affiliations. In other words, they do not fight for a national struggle, nor change their lives for banditry. They simply express their own values, neither more nor less.
Kilama Xalis Beg by Dengbêj Şakiro

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Aghao, Aghao</th>
<th>O agha, O agha</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sibe ye, şerekî li me çêbû, qaleka li me qewimî hey la lo míro li Banê Xopan ji xwe ra vê sivingê çîya bi çîya.</td>
<td>It is morning, a conflict happened, we have had a clash, o lord, at the Banê Xopan from mount to mount.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sibe ye, min dît dûkê gawir Mencolîyê li ser kozika Xalis Begê, berxê Mala Şêrxo, bavê Xanimê, gula xaçaghan ji èvar da tev li hevgeriya.</td>
<td>It is morning, I saw the smoke of Gawir Mencoli is circling over the trench of Xalis Beg, the lamb of Mala Şêrxo, the father of Xanim, the rose of fugitives, since the evening.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Le Xalis Begê bi sê dengan bang dikir digot Ahmedo lo lawo tu çê bi çê bixebite Eskerê vî zalimê, cimhûra teze ye, buhurê Mûradê li me birîye,</td>
<td>Xalis Beg shouted three times, saying, O Ahmed, let’s work hard, The army of this new Republic is cruel, they have blocked the passage of the Murad River, Let’s see, we have lost so many young men since the evening.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tu dêna xwe bide îro ji èvar da koka xulan û xizmetkaran li me qeliya.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>È Aghao li min è li min è li min è li min è hey wayê, Agirê kulê di mala Roma virek da dayê, Çawa bi zora dare tivingê diajo ser kozika bavê Xanimê, gula qaçaghan, ez nemînim li ser qedayê wa hêy.</td>
<td>O agha, woe is me, woe, woe May the house of the liar Rom (Turkish State) be burned down! As they are attacking on the trench of the father of Xanim, the rose of fugitives with their superior gunpower, may I die because of this misfortune.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aghao, Aghao</td>
<td>O agha, O agha</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

341 This kilam is told, and probably created by dengbêj Şakiro, and it is available on YouTube.

342 Once again, as it was stated before, lamb refers to young men of the family in the Kurdish-Kurmanji cultural context. It also refers to be ready to sacrifice yourself for your community.

343 As being a notable the Sipkan tribe, Xalis Beg had people who were serving for him even when he was an escapee. Similarly, as a notable of Hesenan tribe, Ferzende Beg also had men to serve for him. This status would be the breaching point of their trouble with Edoyê Ezîzî as it will be shown in the next pages.
Herê maqulo sîving e şereka li me çêbû, qaleka li me qewimî hey la lo mîro li Banê Xopanê, li Xûnaçê, Sibe ye gule têne bavê Xanimê, resmiyê Xalis begê, gula qaçaghan, fenanî tawîyê.

Yes, o wise man, it is morning, a conflict happened, we have had a clash, O lord, at the Banê Xopanê, in Xûnaçê, It is morning, as a hailstorm, the bullets are striking Xalis Beg’s trench, the father of Xanim, the rose of fugitives.

Kesekî xwedanê xêran tunîne cewabekê bide Evdilmecîd Begê li kavilîya mefîtîyê Bibê mala te xerabo derbekê dest berdane bedena Xalis Begê, berxê mala Şêrxo, bavê Xanimê, gula qaçagha. Birîna vi xweşmêrî kur e, xedar e, li destê rastê, li tîlîyê.

There is no one to deliver the news to Evdilmecîd Beg who has been exiled, [Saying] “Damn you, they have shot Xalis Beg, the lamb of Mala Şêrxo, the father of Xanim, the rose of fugitives, The wound of this hero is heavy on his right hand, on the finger.”

Ê Aghao li min ê li min ê li min ê li min ê hey wayê, Agirê kulê di mala Roma virek da dayê Çawa bi zora darê tivingê diajon ser kozika bavê Xanimê, gula qaçaghan, ez nemînim li ser qedayê.

O agha, woe is me, woe, woe May the house of the liar Rom (Turkish State) be burned down, As they are attacking the trench of the father of Xanim, the rose of fugitives with their superior gunpower, may I die because of this misfortune.

Xalis Beg was the son of Evdilmecîd Beg who was both a notable of the Sipkan tribe and a military commander in the Hamidiye Regiments. In 1926, when the Turkish government decided to exile the Kurdish notables to the western part of Anatolia, Xalis Beg refused to obey the decision, and escaped to the mountains alongside his armed tribesmen. Then, upon hearing that Biro Heskî Têllê has also escaped and started a resistance in Mount Agirî, he went there and joined him. Xalis Beg and Ferzende Beg had a kinship relation.

---

344 Evdilmecîd Beg is the father of Xalis Beg, and the head of Sipkan tribe. He was leading a regiment in the Hamidiye Army and fought against Russians in the 1st World War. After the revolt of Sheikh Said, in 1925, although he was a bystander during the revolt, he was exiled as many other Kurdish notables. He died in 1930. Two kilams about Evdilmecîd Beg while he was fighting against the Russian army during the 1st World War will be examined in the next section.

345 Xalis Beg’s life story will be given at the end of this chapter.
Asiya, the mother of Ferzende was the daughter of Hecî Êsîvê Sîpkî, a notable of the Sipkan tribe. Thus, the mother of Ferzende and the father of Xalis were cousins. They were called Torin, a name of a certain notable family.

When analyzing the Kilama Xalis Beg, as opposed to the Kilama Ferzende Beg, the enemy is not Iran but the new Turkish Republic; and it is expressed by the word Cîmhûr, which in this context refers to the Turkish Republic:

| Eskerê vî zalimê Cîmhûra teze ye, bihûrê | The army of this new Republic is cruel, they have blocked the passage of the Murad River, |
| Mûradê li me birîye | Let’s see, we have lost so many young men since the evening. |
| Tu dêna xwe bidê ji evar da îro koka xulam û xizmetkaran li me qelîya |  |

Hence, the fight is against the new Turkish Republic, and the context is the Kurdish resistance that occurred in Agîrî in 1930. However, once again, no reference can be found regarding ethnic claims, whereas there are clues about the aristocratic roots of Xalis Beg. For example, despite being a fugitive and wanted by the government, Xalis Beg has young men serving and fighting under his command during the resistance.

Perhaps, because of Xalis Beg’s aristocratic status, there is some exaggeration in the narrative. While the Turkish attack led to the mass killing of young fighters, the kilam focuses on the wound of Xalis Beg and describes it as a "heavy wound" although it is a relatively light wound that damaged his finger.

Since there are no ethnic or national claims in the narrative, the fighters are described in terms such as brave or honest as below:

| Agîrê kulê di mala Roma virek da yê, Çawa bi zora tivingê diajo ser kozîka bavê Xanimê, gula qaçaghan, ez nemînim li ser qedayê | May the house of the liar Rom (Turkish State) be burned down, As they are attacking the trench of the father of Xanim with their superior gunpower, may I die because of this misfortune |

As in the Kilama Ferzende Beg, the Turkish state here called “Rom” is the Turkish Republic. Rom is described as a liar. This description refers to the Kurmanjs’ actual experience. Before starting the Turkish national struggle, to receive Kurds’ support, the
Turkish leaders promised to restore Kurdish notables to their former status. After achieving their aims, they simply forgot those promises. This caused the Kurdish chieftains, to distrust the Turks. Moreover, distrust towards the Turkish state has deep historical roots among Kurds. The expression Bextê Romê tune (the Turkish state is treasonable) clearly reflects the attitude of Kurdish people toward to the Turkish states.

In the kilam, Xalis Beg is called as "the rose of fugitives", i.e., the dearest one among the fugitives. To illustrate his bravery, the cowardice of the Turkish army is underlined. The Turkish army attacks the trench of Xalis Beg with their superior gun power. This means, they are not brave enough to fight one to one, or with equal guns, but they are attacking Xalis Beg’s trench with superior arms.

In the Kilama Xalis Beg, contrary to Turkish and Kurdish written accounts, Xalis Beg is not represented as a national hero or a bandit, but as a local/tribal hero who bravely fights against the Turkish army. He is “the rose of fugitives” as the leader of the escaping fighters. For rebelling against the Turkish government and clashing with it, the kilam describes him as a hero. However, this heroism described in terms of local values which were far removed from the notion of a national framework.

Briefly, although Xalis Beg was a part of the resistance in Agirî, and Kurdish written sources put him on the stage as a Kurdish national hero, there is nothing about national resistance or Kurdish struggle in the kilam. The whole narrative evolves around personal, familial, and tribal matters.
### Kilama Edoyê Ezîzî by Dengbêj Nûroyê Bazîdî

| Zeytûnê rebenê sibe ye min dît suwarên me suwar bûn diajon ji Îranê ji Tûran ê | Zeytûnê, the poor one, it is morning, I saw that our riders have mounted and are riding from Iran and Turan, |
| Hey la li min korê de diajon bi caran vê carê bi xal û lez in | O the blind one, they used to ride but this time they are in rush, |
| Min di pêşiya suwaran dakete Xana Delal, dawiya suwaran xwe gihandine Deveboynîya şewitî, ji kubara sibê ra çadir ê xwe kutane de vê sivingê (sibehê) li Xeylazê li devê Ava Rez e. | I saw that the pioneers have gone to Xana Delal while the rearguard has reached the burned Deveboynî, They pitched their tents at Xeylaz, next to the spring of Ava Rez in this morning. |
| Xwedê kula xwe bike mala Xalis û Ferzende her du lawên Torinî ji bo xatirê Edoyê Ezîzî, bavê Ezed, kela deştê, serekê fîraran girtin qerez e lawo, | May God give a heavy pain to the families of Xalis and Ferzende, the two sons of Torin (family), for the sake of Edoyê Ezîzî, the father of Ezed, the castle of the plain, the leader of fugitives. |
| Heyfa min nayê li kuştina Edoyê Ezîzî bavê Ezed, kela deştê, serekê qandar û fîraran, heyfa min tê li wê heyfê, Li serê meydanê derbêkê lê dane bejn û bala Umer, zavayê teze ûy ûy ûy | I do not lament for killing of Edoyê Ezîzî, the father of Ezed, the leader of opponents and fugitives, I lament that they have shot the body of Umer, the newly married one, in the middle ground. |
| De fîraro lo ûy ûy ûy ax de lo yê lo yê lo yê. | O the fugitive, ah. |

---

346 This kilam is taken from my private collection. Although it was available on YouTube in past, it is not reachable anymore. There are a few different versions of this kilam on YouTube, but they are not good in sense of length and sound quality. Thus, they are not beneficial for this study.

347 Umer is the nephew of Edoyê Ezîzî. While Edoyê Ezîzî was killed by Ferzende Beg, Umer had gone to water spring to bring water for the group. He did not know that his uncle is killed. When he came back to the group, they killed him as well. Since he was young and newly married, he is described as “the newly married one” in the kilam. (Source: Ahmed Aras, interview, 3rd May 2020).
O Zeytûn, the poor one, it is a gray morning. Our riders have mounted and are riding from Iran and Turan, They dismounted from the horses on Mount Tendurek at the three points, I saw that they rode to the burned Mêrgemîr, to Şehîdê Gazê to stop the caravan. I saw that they rode from three sides, and they gathered at the three points. I saw that they have pitched their tents, at the Mêrgemîr, at Şehîdê Gazê, at Berê

348 Hefiderbe is a Kurdish word to name some specific bandolier.

349 Berdel is a Kurdish term which means barter. In the context of kilam, it means, as wise leader, Edoyê Ezîzî should not be killed in response to his words to Kamilê Merxûrî, a manservant of Xalis Beg. To compare -or barter- him with Kamilê Merxûrî, and kill him in that way is perfidy. For further explanation, see the next two pages.
| li Mêrgemîrê, Şehîdê Gazê, li Berê Belek, de li devên çavkanîyan. | Belek, next to the mouths of the springs. |
| Xwedê kula xwe bike mala Xalis û Ferzende, her du lawên Torinê, derbekê dane bejn û bala Edoyê Ezîzî, bavê Ezed, kela deştê, serekê fîraran, | May God give a heavy pain to the families of Xalis and Ferzende, the two sons of Torin (family), for they have shot the body of Edoê Ezîzî, the father of Ezed, the castle of the plain, the leader of fugitives, |
| Heyfa min nayê bi kuştîna wî bi tenê, heyfa min tê li wê heyfê kesekî xwedanê xêran tune cewebekê bibe ba konsolê Roma gewre, ba tehîldarê li taxê, qaymeqamê Elajgîrê, mîlisê Kurmanjan, bê(je) agirê kulê bi mala we keta kuştîne Edoyê Ezîzî, bavê Ezed, | I do not lament for killing of him all alone, |
| Hûnê rabin ji gava dinê da qeytanan ji wan qeytanên sor bikşînin dora van şewqan | I lament that there is no one who can deliver the news to the consulate of Rom, to the tax collector of the region, to the governor of Elajgîr, to the Kurmanj militias, and say, |
| Le fîraro lo úy úy úy, qandaro lo úy úy úy | “I wish the pain of wounds capture your homes, they have killed Edoê Ezîzî, the father of Ezed, |

O the fugitive, the opponent one, ah.

Edoyê Ezîzî was not a notable person. He was neither an agha nor a beg nor was he involved in politics. He was a soldier in a Hamidiye Regiment under the command of Kor Huseyin Pasha. In the beginning of 1926, when Turkish soldiers were involved in the sexual harassment of a girl from his family, Edoyê Ezîzî organized a group of his relatives, attacked the military base, and killed the soldiers who were involved. Afterwards, he escaped to the mountains with his armed group and became an enemy of the Turkish government. Edoyê Ezîzî is the second group leader who joined the Agîrî resistance after Biro Heskî Têlli.350

---

In this kilam, we hear about a rivalry between Edoyê Ezîzî, who was from the lower classes, and Xalis Beg and Ferzende Beg who were from the upper class known as Torin. The following part of the kilam indicates this rivalry and class hatred:

| Xwedê kula xwe bika mala Xalis â Ferzende | I wish God gives a heavy pain to the families of Xalis and Ferzende, the two sons of Torin, since they have hatred toward to Edoyê Ezîzî, the father of Ezed, the castle of the plain, the leader of the fugitives. |
| Her du lawên Torinê | Ji bo xatirê Edoyê Ezîzî, bavê Ezed, kela deştê, serekê firaran girtene qerez e lawo |

Edoyê Ezîzî was not famous previously, but his fame spread amongst the people more widely than that of Ferzende and Xalis during the fight around Mount Agirî. He was famous for fearlessly attacking the Turkish soldiers and mercenaries, killing them, and looting caravans.351

Then, after looting an Iranian caravan, trouble over the ownership of a rifle that was seized from the caravan became the breaking point, and Edoyê Ezîzî was killed by Ferzende Beg.

In fact, three of the foremost names in the Agirî resistance, namely, Ferzende Beg, Xalis Beg and Edoyê Ezîzî committed this looting together. While checking the bags they seized from the caravan, one of the servants of Xalis Beg, Kamilê Merxurî352 took a rifle from a bag and claimed that it was the rightful booty of his agha, Xalis Beg. Edoyê Ezîzî became angry and insulted him and his agha. At this point, Ferzende Beg, who already had animosity towards Edoyê Ezîzî, shot and killed him.

Furthermore, Xalis and Ferzende ordered the killing of Umer, the young nephew of Edoyê Ezîzî, to prevent potential revenge from him. Umer had gone to water spring to bring water for the group but was tragically killed by his own companions. Thus, in addition to Edoyê Ezîzî, his nephew Umer, “the newly married one”, was also killed by their fellows as it is expressed in the kilam:

351 Ahmed Aras conveys that Xalis Beg had warned Edoyê Ezîzî that Ferzende maybe will kill him since his fame is growing, and since even the attack they hold together is considered as braveness of Edoyê Ezîzî by the society. However, Edoyê Ezîzî did not care about it. See; Aras, Ahmed, Serhildana Seyidan û Beraczan, Weşanên Perî, Istanbul, 2009, p.16.

352 We had heard this name as one of the foremost rebels in the book of Garo Sasuni in the beginning of this section. As stated before, it looks that Sasuni has just listed the names he had heard without any further investigation. Kamilê Merxurî was from Patnos and serving for Xalis Beg even before the resistance. Namely, he was not a foremost name in the resistance as Sasuni argued but a manservant of Xalis Beg.
Heyfa min nayê li kuştina Edoyê Ezîzî, bavê Ezed, kela û demê, serekê qandar û firaran

Heyfa min të li wê heyfê, li sere meydanê derbêkê lê dane bejn û bala Umer, zavayê teze

I do not lament for killing of Edoyê Ezîzî, the father of Ezed, the leader of opponents and fugitives,

I lament that they have shot Umer, the newly married one, in the middle of ground.

Interestingly, both the Turkish and Kurdish written accounts are silent about these assassinations. It is possible that the Turkish officers did not hear of it at the time because the incident happened across the border in Iran. Moreover, in the Turkish official reports Edoyê Ezîzî is not listed among the rebels in Agîrî, and he may have been known by another name. Nonetheless, it is strange that even after many decades, the Turkish side is still silent about Edoyê Ezîzî and his death.

The Kurdish accounts have simply ignored the assassinations. İhsan Nuri mentions Edoyê Ezîzî as one of the three remaining group leaders after the Amnesty Law in 1928 but keeps silent about his death. There are other publications about the Agîrî resistance in later years, but they are also in silence. In fact, it is impossible to suppose that none of them have heard of these events, because the story is known among the people in Serhed. Nonetheless, the Kurdish sources do not report it, possibly as it does not fit the nationalistic framework which they propagate.

However, although both the Turkish and Kurdish written accounts ignore this story, it is conveyed through the oral narratives of dengbêjs.

As we see, in the kilam, Edoyê Ezîzî is not described as a national hero, nor is he a bandit. Instead, he is described as "the fearless leader of fugitives" and "the castle of the plain." The kilam laments the killing of Edoyê Ezîzî as a response to the insult of Kamilê Merxûrî.

353 As far as I know only Ahmed Aras has written about the story of Edoyê Ezîzî as it is transmitted in the kilam. See; Aras, Ahmed, Serhidana Seyîdan û Berazan, Weşanên Perî, Istanbul, 2009, pp.15-16. Besides being from Serhed and having a lot of firsthand witnesses and hearsay, since Ahmed Aras has been mainly based on oral witnesses in his works his information about Edoyê Ezîzî matches with the kilam. He also confirmed it when I interviewed him for this dissertation and gave some more details about the incident. He said, when I had some interview with the son of Edoyê Ezîzî in 1981, in Ankara, he even did not want to talk about the Kurdish issue since he was so disappointed about the Kurds. See: Ahmed Aras, interview, 3rd May 2020.
Perhaps an even more interesting point in the Kilama Edoyê Ezîzî is the list of his enemies:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>heyfa min tê li wê heyfê kesêkî xwedanê xêran tune cewabêkê bile ba konsolê Roma gewre, ba tehşîldarê li taxê, qaymeqamê Elajgîrê, milîsê Kurmanjan, bê(je) agîrê kulê di mala we keta kuştine Edoyê Ezîzî, bavê Ezed,</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I lament that there is no one who can deliver the news to the consulate of the Rom (Turkish State), to the tax collector of the region, to the governor of Elajgîr, to the Kurmanj militias, and say, “I wish the pain of wounds capture your homes, they have killed Edoyê Ezîzî, the father of Ezed, Let’s take red ribbons for a while and wind them round your hats (to show your happiness from his death)”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hûnê rabin ji gava dinê da qeytananj ji wan qeytanên sor bikşînin dora van şewqan</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The list of enemies of Edoyê Ezîzî consists different groups of people who were mostly in the service of the Turkish government, and they are -ironically- invited to decorate their hats with red ribbons to show their happiness from the death of Edoyê Ezîzî. It looks that Edoyê Ezîzî’s actions and fame led to hatred among a wide range of enemies. That is why they are ironically invited to show their happiness from his death in the kilam.

Understandably, despite being involved in banditry issues, the key figure is neither a bandit nor a hero who fought for Kurdish nation in the kilam. Rather, in the collective memory of the Kurmanj society he is a fearless and brave tribesman who was killed by his fellows.

4.3 Social-Cultural Background of the Society in the Beginning of 20th Century

In compare of the oral narratives, we recognize that concepts like national identity and national struggle were only known to some members of the Kurdish elite in the beginning of 20th century. These were either intellectuals or military officers mainly living in Istanbul, then, on exile. Since they tended to see the Kurdish people as a united nation, they described
the Ağırî resistance in this way in their writings. Therefore, all popular and scholarly works followed these accounts in the past decades.

However, oral accounts show that during the resistance in Ağırî, the people who were involved in the resistance were not unified. The Kurmanj society was divided along the lines of tribes and families, among whom conflicts often occurred. Therefore, attempts to portray their actions as inspired by a Kurdish nationalist attitude are not realistic. In fact, no unified Kurdish nation or national struggle existed during the resistance around Ağırî at that time (1930s). Each group was coming with their own perspectives.

For example, if we take a closer look to the Zîlan insurgency which was a more unified action than in Ağırî, we see that all the people who were involved in the revolt were from sub-tribes and malbats (families) belonging to the Heyderan. However, like many other parts of the divided Kurdish society, the Heyderans (Heyderî) had problems with each other, even on the level of leadership. In the earlier years, two cousins of Kor Huseyin Pasha, Emin Pasha, and Temir Pasha, who were also each leading two Hamidiye Regiments, had collaborated with Hecî Müsâ Begê Xoytî (who was the leader of a rival family) against Kor Huseyin Pasha. Additionally, the Heyderan had conflicts with the Ademan, Sipkan, and Hesenan tribes for many decades. They also had ongoing conflicts with the Celâlî tribal confederation which consisted of several tribes.354

Furthermore, the Celâlî tribes had conflicts among themselves. As we saw earlier, since the religious leader of Saqan tribe sided with the Ağırî rebels, their rival, the Qotan tribe, fought on behalf of the Turkish government. Moreover, in the middle of the Turkish military operations, the Qizilbaşoxî and Geloyî tribes were fighting and plundering each other. Ihsan Nuri and some leading fighters desperately tried to stop this and unify them against the Turkish government, but this did not work at all.355

For those people, the resistance on the mountain had different meanings. Most of the written sources have overlooked this issue and tended to see those people as a unified group which fought against the Turkish government for Kurdistan. However, the rebellion took place in a relatively small area. Most Kurdish people had no idea about the incidents in Ağırî. Even at the actual location of the resistance, most tribes were bystanders while some sided with the Turkish government.

Similarly, the foremost figures in the resistance had different priorities. Some had


confrontations with each other, which weakened the movement. Traditional values and norms dominated not only the society, but also its rulers and the leaders of the resistance. There were tensions and rivalries among the fighters during the resistance despite being considered as members of the same struggle against the Turkish government. Although a fight was going on against the Turkish government, the people in the fight had different aspects and priorities.

Excluding Ihsan Nuri, who served as a captain in both the Ottoman and Turkish armies until 1924 and examining the description of the protagonists in the kilams we analyzed, it is evident that none of the fighters explicitly attributed their Kurdish identity as the motivation for their struggle.

Initially, many of the leaders who were on Mount Agirî in the late 1920s had fought in the Hamidiye Army in the 1910s. Then, during WWI, they fought against the Russian troops as part of the Ottoman army. Even those who did not serve in the Hamidiye Regiments had voluntarily fought against the Russian troops as part of militias. Their main aim in fighting shoulder to shoulder with the Turks against the Russians was to save their religion, Islam. In fact, they were trying to protect their traditional lifestyle which was shaped by Sunni Islam. Thus, protecting Islam was at the same time a means to protect their own lifestyle and values.

Therefore, protecting their status and the Ottomans was a much more realistic motive than building their own nation state, namely, Kurdistan. This perception was shared by the Kurmanj society as well. They had no doubt that fighting for the Khalife (Caliph) was fighting in the name of Islam. This was the biggest motive for them. Furthermore, having a recognized status in the Ottoman Empire and fighting against non-Muslim armies and groups was an honor for them.

Understanding the priorities of the tribes, families, and even persons of that time is very important for evaluating their attitudes. From point of view today, if we take the movements like the one in Agirî as Kurdish national revolts, there is no place left to describe the people as heroes or traitors. In fact, Kurdish identity was not yet a strong tie to connect or separate them. Some had just fought against the infidel Russians as warriors of the Khalif a few years ago. Yes, the new Turkish Republic had excluded them, but it was not clear what the future would bring. It was possible for them to think that the Khalif/Sultan would return, and they would see good times again. Naturally, many fighters on Mount Agirî sought to recover their former status. In fact, claiming their former status was very reasonable for them. The big

---

356 Although the Ottoman Sultan lost his power and status in 1918, and although the new Turkish regime officially canceled the Sultanate on 1st October 1922, they waited until 3rd March 1924 to cancel the Khalifa (Caliphate). Since they knew the religious effects of the Khalif, they did not want to get reaction from people until they strengthened the new regime. Abdulmejid II served as the last Khalif between 18th November 1922 and 3rd March 1924.
Kurdish tribes in the Serhed region had gained many advantages during the regime of Sultan Abdul Hamid. As a matter of fact, the Sultan was called “the father of Kurds” by the Sunni-Shafii Kurds. We find this expression in several kilams.357

For some others, the enmity with their rivals was so sharp that it was far more important than thinking about who was going to rule the country. Some others just had problems with the law: they were wanted by the government to be imprisoned for some criminal offence. In short, there were varieties of different people and groups which had different attitudes and motives to join the resistance.

For these people their tribal-familial advantage was essential, not a nationalist ideology. That is why some tribes and families sided with the resistance or the Turkish government on account of their traditional rivals. What the Agirî leaders said or what the Xoybûn organization published in Syria was not as important as it is imagined today.

Investigating the activists in Xoybûn we obtain a similar picture. Among the leading names of Xoybûn, Memdûh Selîm Beg was probably the only person who was struggling solely for the freedom of Kurdistan. All others had their own agendas, and the Xoybûn was just a temporary alliance for them. In other words, their involvement in Kurdish politics did not prevent them having different personal aims.

To sum up, as in the kilams examined above, contrary to the purely nationalistic approaches of the written Turkish and Kurdish accounts, these narratives evoke a complex picture. Apparently, the name of the people who played the main role in the Agirî resistance in the written accounts and the narratives are different. The kilams do not pay much attention to figures who are prominent in the written accounts. Instead, they mainly focus on local people who were personally involved in clashes and who are known by the society because of their tribal-familial connections. Also, the way these people are described in the kilams and in the written accounts are not the same, not even similar, especially regarding their aims, values, and priorities.

The analysis of these narratives emphasizes the importance of oral traditions for the study of the history of Kurdish-Kurmanj people. Of course, written sources are important to learn about the past. However, in some cases they reflect only a part of the actual history. In such circumstances, it is necessary to apply other methods such as oral history and examine oral traditions. Especially when studying mostly illiterate communities, ignoring oral traditions can mislead us. Societies that are largely illiterate mainly convey their past through oral narratives.

357 As an example, see; Kilama Emê Gozê: “[…] Sultan Evdîhemîd bavê me ye […]”.
To give more insight regarding the perception of the Kurdish/Kurmanj society and its rulers of just a decade before the Agirî resistance, two more kilams are added at end of this section. These kilams are about the Sipkan tribal fighters in the fight against the Russian troops during the 1\textsuperscript{st} World War. In these two narratives, led by Evdîmêcîd Beg, the father of Xalis Begê Sîpkî, the Sipkan armed men are illustrated while fighting as members of an Hamidiye regiment against the Russian troops.

The first kilam is known as \textit{Kilama Şerê Ser Xelatê}. Although there are some other versions of this kilam, a version told by dengbêj Şakiro is chosen because of the length and sound quality.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Kilama Şerê Ser Xelatê by Dengbêj Şakiro³⁵⁸</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Lo bavo, lo bavo, lo bavo, lo lo bavo</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Sibe ye vê sivingê tu seyr bike bi nimêca sibê</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ra bi ser me ketiyê dengê qulhuwella li minê sewta gazî</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Hela tu dêna xwe bidê vê sivingê malxerabo</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>gelo Xanimê bi sê dengan gazî dikir digo de</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>lê lê Gulnazê</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Wey la gulîbirê tu serê xwe ji xewa şerîn</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bilind bike, eskerê bavê Xalis, kekê Mexsê pir</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>giran e</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Vê sibê ordiya kafîrê Ùris li pêşiyê me ji xwe ra dimêşe</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Ketîye vê sibê lo Qapanê, el-Cewazê, lo bavo,</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>lo bavo, lo bavo, lo lo bavo</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Lo bavo, lo bavo, lo bavo, lo li Êslamiyê.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Lo bavo, lo bavo, lo lo bavo, lo bavo,</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Sibe ye vê sivingê malxerabo Têlîetê bi sê</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>dengan bang dikir digot Mexsê lo bavo,</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Ezê ji te ra sond bixwim ìro vê sivingê derdê</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>me giran e</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Hela tu bi sê dengan bang bike vê sibê alayê</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Kurdan e,</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Tu dêna xwe bidê vê sivingê li milê me yê</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>çepe esker e vê sibê eskerê Hesanan e</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Li milê me yê rastê vê sibê eskerê Kor</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| **O my father, o my father, o my father**  |
| **It is early morning listen to the call of**  |
| **Qulhuwallah³⁵⁹ in the time of prayer,**  |
| **Look, O damn you, Xanim was calling three**  |
| **times this morning, saying, “O Gulnaz,**  |
| **O short-haired one, wake up from your sound**  |
| **sleep and see; the army of the father of Xalis,**  |
| **the brother of Mexsê is very big,**  |
| **This morning, the infidel Russian army is**  |
| **marching before us,**  |
| **They have occupied Qapanê and el-Cewazê,**  |
| **o my father,**  |
| **O my father, o my father, o for Islam.”**  |
| **O my father, o my father, o my father.**  |
| **This early morning Têlîet called three times**  |
| **and said “Mexsê, o my father,**  |
| **I swear, today, this morning we have great**  |
| **trouble,**  |
| **Let us inspect the Kurdish regiments three**  |
| **times,**  |
| **See, this morning, there is the regiment of**  |
| **Hesenan at our left side,**  |
| **At our right side there are twelve regiments**  |

---

³⁵⁸ This version of the kilam is available on YouTube.

³⁵⁹ *Qulhuwallah* are the first words of the “Surah al Ikhlâs” in the Qor’an.
| **Huseyn Pasha, donzdeh alay in, eskerekê pir giran e.** | of Kor Huseyn Pasa, it is a huge army, |
| **Vê sivingê malxerabo bang bike bêje derdê me îro derdekê pir giran e,** | Let us shout aloud this morning, damn you, and say we have great trouble.” |
| **Tu seyr bike Mexsê bi sê dengen bang dikir digot bavo tu caran vê sivingê to bang neke li eșîrên Kurdistan e,** | Look, Mexsê called out three times saying, “this morning, there is no need to call on the Kurdish tribes’, |
| **Ezê ji te ra sond bixwum vê sibê disa bi dengekê êli bang bike nav xwe de bêje vê sivingê va hicûm hicûma mêmên Sipkan e.** | I swear, this morning, |
| **Hicûm hicûma bavê Xalis, kekê Mexsê, vê sibê hicûma Sipkan e** | Let us shout aloud and say, ‘this morning, the attack is made by Sipkan tribesmen’. |
| **Gelo vê sibê emê berdinê û derxînin rastêya Patnosê** | The attack is by the Father of Xalis, the brother of Mexsê, the attack of Sipkan tribesmen, |
| **Ezê ji te ra sond bixwum îro qonagha me Qizqapan e** | This morning we will chase (the enemies) and drive them to the plateau of Patnos, |
| **Lo bavo, lo bavo, lo lo bavo, lo bavo, lo bavo, lo bavo, lo lo bavo, lo bavo, lo bavo, lo bavo, lo İslamiyê.** | I swear to you, our next stop today will be Qizqapan.” |

The **Kilama Şerê Ser Xelatê** is told from the mouth of Xanim, Têlîet, Gulnaz, and Mexsê, the female family members of Evdilmecîd Beg. In the narrative, the Kurdish Hamidiye regiments are bravely fighting against the Russian Army, which has already occupied El-Cewaz and Qizqapan (Turk: Adilcevaz and Kızkapan). Under the command of Evdilmecîd Beg, the Sipkan fighters are marching against the Russian army, aiming to chase them up to Patnos, and to free the occupied Qizqapan region by evening.

If we analyze the narrative step by step, like in the **Kilama Ferzende Beg**, the first and foremost thing that we will find out is the importance of religion, namely, Islam. According to
the kilam, they fought against Russian troops for their religion, not their ethnic identity.\textsuperscript{360}

In this kilam, although the listed regiments solely consist of Kurds and are called “Kurdish Regiments”, there is no connotation of Kurdish nationalism.\textsuperscript{361} It is merely a way of distinguishing them from other Ottoman forces. They are part of the Ottoman Army, and they are proud of it. Being Kurdish may mean they were more willing to protect Islam and/or to fight bravely, but not promote a national identity.

In this sense, although distinguishing themselves from other ethnic groups in the Ottoman Army and identifying themselves as “Kurdish Regiments” we do not hear another word regarding their Kurdishness in the narrative. Instead, they are clearly described as tribal fighters who are fighting against the \textit{kafir} (non-believer) Russian Army just after the morning prayer, with the shouting of \textit{Qul Huwa'lllah}. Saving Islam was their foremost aim and consequently the Russian Army had to be wiped out.

Not only the name of Evdilmecîd Beg, who was commanding the Sipkan fighters is mentioned here, but also that of Kor Huseyin Pasha as the commander of the biggest regiments in the Hamidiye. We have already come across Kor Huseyin Pasha in the Turkish and Kurdish written sources regarding Xoybûn and the Zîlan revolt.

The second kilam, \textit{Kilama Şerê Bavê Xalis}, also describes Evdilmecîd Beg, the father of Xalis Beg, fighting against the Russian Army.

\footnotesize{\textsuperscript{360} Moreover, there are significant indications that they did not even want to fight for Kurdistan. In 1913-1914, the Russians tried to convince Kurds to fight against the Ottomans by offering an independent or autonomous Kurdistan, but leading figures such as Kor Huseyin Pasha and Cemîlê Çeto rejected this. The offer of the Russians was simple and clear: A Kurdish territory to be ruled by Kurds in exchange for their support to wipe out the Turkish forces from the region. However, the Kurdish chieftains preferred to fight on the side of the Ottomans. See; Süphandağ, Kemal, \textit{Osmanlı Arşiv Belgelerinde Heyderan Aşireti ve Ağrı Direnişi}, Pel Yay., Istanbul, 2021, pp.100-101.

\textsuperscript{361} As we saw in the second chapter, while narrating clashes with government armies, people are described both with their familial-tribal roots and their Kurdish identity.}
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Kilama Şerê Bavê Xalis by Dengbêj Şakiro⁶²</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>** Lê dînyayê, hey wayê wayê, ax dînyayê, hey wayê wayê, hey wayê wayê **</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ax dînyayê wayê, hey wayê wayê, ax dînyayê, nemînim li dînyayê</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ezê bi diyarê Dûtaxa şewîtî diketim vê sîvingê, bi dar ü bî ye,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hicûm hicûma bavê Xalis, kekê Meksê ye</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şahîd ü şihûdên bavê Xalis, kekê Meksê li dînyayê pir gelek in</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bî zora şûr ajotîye ser topê ye</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Topa Ûris anîye dest alayê ye hey wayê wayê wayê</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ax dînyayê, hey wayê, ax dînyayê, nemînim li ser dînyayê.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Were wayê wayê dînyayê, ax dînyayê, nemînim li ser dînyayê.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ezê bi diyarê Dûtaxa şewîtî diketim di dîlê min ü te da, dar ü bî ye</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eskerê bavê Xalis dikişîya fenani si ye</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şahid ü şihûdên bavê Xalis, kekê Meksê li dînyayê pir gelek in</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

⁶² This kilam is available on YouTube under the title of “Kilama Şerê Ûris.”

⁶³ In the kilam it is expressed as “bi dar ü bî ye” (Ing: being full of trees) which is just added to keep the rhyme. It can be explained as flowering or turning green.
In this kilam, Evdilmecîd Beg, the leader of Sipkan tribesmen who were fighting as a part of the Ottoman Hamidiye Regiments during WWI, is portrayed while attacking the Russian artillery with his sword. If he is killed, it is said, he will become a šahîd (martyr), and if he survives, a ghazî (religious war hero). Both the terms šahîd and ghazî have Islamic connotations. As a result of his courage, he successfully seizes the Russian artillery, and brings it to the Hamidiye regiment.

In the kilam we hear the significance of religion, the bravery of Evdilmecîd Beg and his Sipkan tribesmen but we hear nothing regarding their ethnic or national identity.

These two kilams reflect the perception of the society and the status of the Kurdish leaders just a decade before the Ağîrî Resistance. The same people who were allies of the Ottomans became enemies of the new Turkish Republic, but they still had the same worldview. Since they were fighting alongside the Turkish/Ottoman troops until 1917 to protect their religion, social status, and land, it seems highly unlikely that they could have transformed their fundamental sense of identity and become Kurdish nationalist fighters in such a short time. Moreover, most of the leaders were still respected chieftains until 1926. Their problems came with the new government. The new regime simply ignored their past, betrayed and excluded them. It was their main reason for fighting against the new Turkish Republic.
5 CONCLUSION

For decades, dengbêjî has suffered from a lack of academic interest; it was not perceived as a significant topic. Until the 2000s there was a very limited number of publications which discussed dengbêjî. In the past decade some popular articles and books have appeared, and several theses were published. Some of these accounts contributed understanding of the tradition. Some of them merely glorified the tradition, whereas others analyzed it from the point of view of today, apparently assuming that the tradition was unchanging. Yet another part of these accounts approached dengbêjî as a mere part of Kurdish folklore, instead of analyzing it in detail as an independent tradition. Additionally, even the few good studies tend to evaluate the narratives as single, independent pieces, rather than as part of a specific genre that reflects the history of society.

The present study seeks to avoid the glorification of recent years and to focus on its actual role in society. The research approaches dengbêjî mainly as a way of creating and preserving collective memory. It discusses the topic from the perspective of memory studies and connects it to the debates about literacy and illiteracy. Furthermore, on account of its content, performance, and locations, it distinguishes dengbêjî from other Kurdish oral traditions and classifies its production as a particular genre which is directly connected to Kurmanji culture.

The dissertation consists of three chapters. The first chapter discussed the dengbêjî tradition as a part of Kurdish-Kurmanj people's collective memory. Since literacy was not common among this community until recent decades, in this chapter, the tradition was discussed in the context of the interrelation between literacy and illiteracy. Examining the role of rural life and the meaning of orality in the Kurmanji culture, the chapter seeks to understand how these people have remembered their past through oral traditions.

The second chapter obtains to specify and distinguish dengbêjî from other Kurdish oral and musical traditions and defines its narrative as a particular genre. In the beginning of the chapter, the existing literature regarding dengbêjî was reviewed. After that, the characteristics of the tradition, its locations, performance style and period were analyzed to lead the definition of dengbêjî as a particular Kurmanji tradition, which informs and reflects the collective memory of the society. Timewise, the research covers the period from the 1880s to the 1980s.
The third chapter examines the Agirî resistance, which occurred between 1926 and 1930 around Mount Agirî, as a case study. The aim of this chapter was to evaluate the evidence offered by certain kilams regarding the collective memory of an important segment of Kurdish society about the Agirî resistance, and to compare these oral accounts with existing Turkish and Kurdish written sources.

The main objectives of this study, which are treated in the three chapters, are:

1. To explore dengbêjî as a distinct oral tradition and its narratives as a unique genre.
2. To investigate how the narratives contribute to the collective memory and cultural heritage of the Kurmanj people.
3. To delve into a specific historical era within this community, as depicted in the kilams, and subsequently, to juxtapose this evidence with written source for comparison.

The findings of this work can be listed as follows:

1. Dengbêjî is a specific oral tradition which exists among Kurmanji speaking Kurdish people only in certain areas.
2. Like other oral traditions in the region, it is not unchanging. It exists under certain conditions involving culture, lifestyle, location, and others. Then, when those conditions change it may vanish.
3. Dengbêjî is not only a kind of art and performance. It is also a part of the society’s collective memory. Kurmanj people have produced, stored, and conveyed their history through this tradition.
4. This collective memory reflects the perception of the society regarding its past. The contents of this perception significantly differ from the accounts of written sources. Whereas written accounts describe historical events and people through the lenses of modern literate people, the kilams present the same events and people in a different way, representing the actual perception of the society of that time. In this way, we can go beyond the written sources and see how people described the events of their past, how the society remembered them, and how this history was handed down to the next generations.

In the third chapter of the dissertation, the theoretical arguments presented earlier are
applied to a case study. The criticism of Astrid Errl and Jan Assmann’s to detachment of memory from history was very helpful to me in studying the narratives as a form of history. Ong’s remarks on the hegemony of literacy prompted me to pay critical attention to the accounts written about mainly illiterate Kurmanj society of 1920s. Portelli’s work on the subjectivity of individual memory and Thomson’s work on the construction of memory helped me to gain a better understanding of collective memory as opposed to individual memory. Halbwachs’ analysis of group memory which deals with past events, and the way they are memorized by the community through narratives, songs, rituals etc., was crucial for understanding the role of kilams in creation of collective memory among Kurmanjs as presented here. Vansina’s research illustrates the importance of oral traditions as inside information and helped me to realize the limitations of outsiders when studying oral traditions. Finally, Kreyenbroek’s works regarding the languages, religions, and oral traditions in Iranian studies were insightful for me in defining the scope of my work.

Considering the scholarly insights discussed above, this study delves into how people have preserved their collective memory of past events through oral traditions. Consequently, the primary contribution of this study lies in challenging the reliability of written narratives shaped by nationalist influences, and in seeking to recover the authentic perspectives of the Kurmanj people regarding historical events as an alternative historical account.

Therefore, the third chapter of this dissertation challenges the Kurdish discourse which tends to evaluate all past Kurdish conflicts as Kurdish national movements. As it was shown in this chapter, the main body of modern Kurdish discourse regarding past is built upon written accounts. If one examines the issue from today’s viewpoint and builds their theory upon written accounts only, the likely outcome is a very narrow perspective. A different perspective can be achieved by the study of collective memory. Collective memory tends to preserve the perceptions of the society of the time. It reflects the society’s authentic values and criteria, which in many cases does not match the accounts of the written sources.

Nonetheless, as it was stated before, this study does not claim to seek historical truths, nor does it argue that oral history is more consistent than written ones, or that oral traditions are sufficient for historiography. Distinguishingly, my research applies a new perspective to the recent past of Kurdish-Kurmanj people to understand their world through their own words, as my dissertation title already implies.

Personally, when I started to work on this dissertation, I knew that dengbêjî is a part of collective memory through my previous works. Nonetheless, I also thought of the Agirî
resistance mainly as a Kurdish national struggle in connection with Xoybûn. I did not expect that the collective memory would show such profound differences from the evidence of written accounts. However, after going into the details of oral sources, and comparing them with the written accounts I discovered that it is very different from what we read or see today. Beyond the documents written by literate people, there is a world through words in the narratives. Through this study I tried to understand and reflect that world.

Written sources may show only one side of the facts, and scholars should perhaps look for the other sides as well. Oral sources can contribute to see other sides. And, since Kurdish society has a considerable number of oral accounts, it is worth having further and deeper studies of them.

It is important to mention that some of disregarded written documents may also help to understand the perception of ordinary people who were part of the resistance in Ağırlı. The trial of the people after the failure would be a good topic for research. Hundreds of people were judged in Adana. Thirty-one people were sentenced. Some of them died in the prison while some others spent years behind bars. Even after being freed from the prison, they were not allowed to return to their homeland. After several years of exile, they could go back following another Amnesty Law which was adopted in 1947.364

An examination of the trial documents could enhance our understanding of the people involved in the resistance. Furthermore, it could assist us in moving beyond the prevailing approach, which is influenced by written accounts that, as demonstrated in this study, predominantly reflect a nationalist or partisan discourse.

159 APPENDICES
Cumhuriyet

"Ağrıdağı" İhata Edildi

Avrupa Itilifahı ve Türkiye

Avrupa Itilifahısı'nın Türkiye'ye olan etkisidir. Bu etki, Türkiye'nin Avrupa Itilifahı'na dahil olma kararını almış ve bu karar, Türkiye'nin Avrupa Itilifahı'na dahil olma sürecini hızlandırmıştır.

Ağrıdağı harekatı

Tayyarlerimizin üç satılık bombardmanı

Şakiler mutluluk bir panik halinde koşarlara ilica ediyorlar

Şahin Paşa'nın "Karaköse, den hareket etti"

Karaköse 18 (Hz. Ma). Küçük köyden birkaç kilometre uzaklıkta, Zeytin Dalı'nın doğusunda yer alan Karaköse köyü, soygununa uğramıştır.

Ağrıdağı'nın sona ermesi

100,000 İhlak İkramiye Çkti

"Heyeti Vekile içtimai"

Senelik unum döz çevitli 11,555,000 lira olarak test ettiğidır

Ankara 16 (Telefondu).- Senelik unum döz çevitli 11,555,000 lira olarak test ettiğidır. Heyeti, Vekile içtimai olarak test ettiğidır. Dörtlü merkeze döndü ve tekrar içtimai olarak test ettiğidır. Senelik unum döz çevitli 11,555,000 lira olarak test ettiğidır.

12 senelin fark!

Amerika'ya ayran azasıyi intibalarla gitti

Yeni Ankara, Türk kabiliyeti ve asimilasyonunun bir abidesi

İhitah ediniz ki GAZİ Sizindir!"
Salih Paşa “ Ağrı”, daki ihtiva haremata bizzat idare ediyor

Calırdan sahasındaki tarama hareketi ayı yirmicinin começou kadar ilmal edilecek.

Tayyarelerin aki

Katılıktan 10’u Boş. — İ.] Adalet ve Hukuk Hazinesi cumhuriyeti için ayı sandığına bağlı bir tahsis篙da yapımı bulunduğu bir tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahsis篙da yapımı olduğu tahs

Yeşi köydeki kaza

Tayyareci Galip B. nasıl düştüklerini anlatıyor

"Sıcağın tazyikî mabîthi, tayyare anî bir anlaka düştî, teller’er çarpıtı"

Haydar Rifat Bevîl Anafarta vapuru

Fethiye’ye gitmiş anlaşılmıştır

H. Rifat B. Fethiyede

Temiy dokuz ay böyle gün hapis kararı verdi

Beyazıt Bevîl Anafarta vapuru Fethiye’ye gitmiş anlaşılmıştır.

Sebebi genelde tayyareler şefi

Raybati ve diğerleri için gerekli olanlarla birlikte verildiği birli
Figure 5

Cumhuriyet

İlk Tren Bugün "Sivas", a Varyyor

Hakiki Almanya

Kültür Almanya'nın Pey-
ne Simdiği Durum Sizin- 
leri İsteyen Sizin için. 

Gazi eylem dünyasında ke

Harekat bitti

Türk hudutları dahilinde tek 

yabancı sahip kalmamıştır 

ir'an'a kaçmak isteyen sahipler, 80 kilometre iki 

kadar takip ve teşkil edildiler.

Tezgah 18 - Çalışmacı ya-

zýa sabah bir tren aracını ge- 

lince orada yürülen birlik ile 

zirh ile gittikleri hareketi- 

nin kontrolü altında tutu- 

ሌ.

Başka bir de sadece bir ton-

yalık güçli birlik ile hareket 

etmek üzere konuk edildi. 

Khârmatı yakınındaki trig-

nör'de hareket etmek üzere 

bağlanan sahibinin evelde 

nin kontrolü altında tutu-

 ASUS 18 (Telefonica)

Telefoncu'nun açıklığına 

sahibinin evelde eklendi. 

Arpa - Japonya'ya sahip olan 

halka kampları veya sah- 

be rehberlerini almak sadece 

biri değil. Birleşik Polis 

Topluluklarını tanıma 

Teşvik Kararıyla Kabilde En Yüksek 

sahibi olan Ege Menderes 

tahkimatı yapılan orneklerle 

şirketin konumunun yet- 

miş olduğu. 

Kurultay cari kaleleri işley- 

mektedir.

Mübeccel Hanım, dün - 

parisi hareket etti.

31 Ağustos'ta diğer gazeteler bile ilk e 

sahibi Sivas'a gidecektir.

Köprücü Carriyet'ten haber 

oldu. İstanbul'dan birlik Tek 

travmatik yaralıları 80 kí- 

ilmetli birlik ile hareket 

etmek üzere konuk edildi. 

İkinci senelik maaslar

25 ila 45 yaş arasındaki kuzi- 

ların seneleri 2 yil arayla 

Tadayat an gün 

devam edecek

İstanbul'da cari kaleleri ve 

arşivlerine, birlikte tarihi 

haritalara, okul ve kütüphanelerine 

Terasbahçe'nin otopark 

sahibi olan Asgari'yi 

kuzi anma törenleriyle 

hâkim hâkim hâkim hâkim 

hâkim hâkim

4• inci sahife:

İki seneleri maaslarını 

tercih edecek. 

Açıklayıcı olmak için, 

hâkim hâkim hâkim

hâkim hâkim hâkim 

hâkim hâkim

5• inci sahife:

Açıklayıcı olmak için, 

hâkim hâkim hâkim

hâkim hâkim hâkim 

hâkim hâkim hâkim 

hâkim hâkim

163
Alman Gurubu Ile Müzikere Bitti

İran’la müsabakatın tamamlandı.

Salih Paşanın beyanatı

"Hakkarî", ye akin yapan Musul Kürtleri geriye püskürtüldü

"Ağrdağ", harekâtı bugün başlayacak ve pek kısa bir zaman zarfında ikim edecek

20 milyonluk malzeme istikrazı mukavelesi bugün imzalanacak!

Bir başka kılıcı: "Amerika'da bulunmuş Sé três’ün 599.420.500 TL’lik parasına Anadolu’da Köşk’a bir Köşk'a da para yatırıldı."

Haydar Rifat Bey'den hapıslaneye girdi

Diyor ki: "Ben yataken davran alaka uyandırmaktan devam edecektir."

Bulgular

Gazi Hz. nin mühim beyanları

Matbuat'umuzun yılın haricindeiker... Bulgaristan'ın haricindeiker...

Müthiş bir kadın!

17 şampiyona kahraman Mel. Mari Istanbul'a getirdi, konferanslar verecek

Mütis bir kadın!

17 şampiyona kahraman Mel. Mari İstanbul'a geldi, konferanslar verecek
Salih Paşanın beyanatı

Selim Arıcan, Birinci grafite sahibi, Lübnanlı bir subaydı. 1940’lu yılların sonlarından beri Paris’te oturuyordu. 1950’lerin ortalarında, Fransa ile Lübnan ilişkileriONSUNUN GÖSTERİCİSİ

Zaman: 7 Ocak 1950

Lisansa sadeleştirme mes’elis

Ali Ekrem Beyin 6 inci mektubu

İlhamz münevverlerin telaffuzundan alınmalı, gramer ve lügatımızın hiss食品药品an hâlâ olmalmıdır.

Turu: Hizmet

Zaman: 7 Ocak 1950

Ali Ekrem Beyin 6 inci mektubu

İlhamz münevverlerin telaffuzundan alınmalı, gramer ve lügatımızın hiss食品药品an hâlâ olmalmıdır.

Turu: Hizmet

Zaman: 7 Ocak 1950

Ali Ekrem Beyin 6 inci mektubu

İlhamz münevverlerin telaffuzundan alınmalı, gramer ve lügatımızın hiss食品药品an hâlâ olmalmıdır.

Turu: Hizmet

Zaman: 7 Ocak 1950

Ali Ekrem Beyin 6 inci mektubu

İlhamz münevverlerin telaffuzundan alınmalı, gramer ve lügatımızın hiss食品药品an hâlâ olmalmıdır.

Turu: Hizmet

Zaman: 7 Ocak 1950

Ali Ekrem Beyin 6 inci mektubu

İlhamz münevverlerin telaffuzundan alınmalı, gramer ve lügatımızın hiss食品药品an hâlâ olmalmıdır.

Turu: Hizmet

Zaman: 7 Ocak 1950

Ali Ekrem Beyin 6 inci mektubu

İlhamz münevverlerin telaffuzundan alınmalı, gramer ve lügatımızın hiss食品药品an hâlâ olmalmıdır.

Turu: Hizmet

Zaman: 7 Ocak 1950

Ali Ekrem Beyin 6 inci mektubu

İlhamz münevverlerin telaffuzundan alınmalı, gramer ve lügatımızın hiss食品药品an hâlâ olmalmıdır.

Turu: Hizmet

Zaman: 7 Ocak 1950

Ali Ekrem Beyin 6 inci mektubu

İlhamz münevverlerin telaffuzundan alınmalı, gramer ve lügatımızın hiss食品药品an hâlâ olmalmıdır.
Halımim müjdeli

Harekat başarılı

İsmet Pasa Beyannatta Bulunacak

Yazıcı

Güzellik müsabakası

Güzel 1 ağustosta

Amerikaya gidiyorlar

Yusuf Nadi

Kumanda heyeti

Harekât başlıyor

Spor

Dr. A. Kutlubey

Yalvaç Belediyesi'ninden:

Bartın postası (Hilal, Aziz, Tavşan, Kodela, Antakya)

Sanayi ve Mühendislik Fakültesi

Türk Ticaret Bankası

Yazı Cezban

Gözümle Bakış (Seyh, Seyh, Seyh)

Gözülme(Yaz, Yaz, Yaz)

Gözülme(Yaz, Yaz, Yaz)

Gözülme(Yaz, Yaz, Yaz)
İsme P. ş. nın Dün kü Mükim Nutku

Diploma tevzii merasimine.. İsmet P. ş. Hz. yeni Hukukçulara hitaben mühim bir nutuk söyledi

Bir avuç çapucuya birkaç yünde yola getirilmiş münkündür İsmet P. ş. Hz. yarın İstanbul’da geliyor

Avrupa bizi bilmiyor!

Ahmet Üzümlü


Tımar fahri ile çarşambı çarşısındaki babaların hakimlik hayatına büyük bir onur olmuştur. Babası Cevdet Paşa, hukukçularını ve ittifaklarını hizmete vermek için İstanbul’a geldi.

İsmet P. ş. Hz. yeni Hukukçulara hitaben mühim bir nutuk söyledi


Babası Cevdet Paşa, hukukçularını ve ittifaklarını hizmete vermek için İstanbul’a geldi.

İsmet P. ş. Hz. yeni Hukukçulara hitaben mühim bir nutuk söyledi.

Figure 11

Suriye Kürt'leri de Iše Karıştılar

Mustafa Kemal
Yürüyan Şark

169

Mali vaziyetimiz
M. Şaht, Müllêrin raporu runu teyt ediyor

Merkezî tedavî Bankasının teşkilî
harðuz mûsûmîte görelmektedir
Maasîfî bu maktatî tevdí de
almamalıdır

Mûsûmîte rélapsonu tevhîdî
hâddinde berî yabanîyênע
bi ro' ji beli kira HDK

Yavuz limanîzînda
Halk güzel gemimizi
sevinçe seyretti

Ağustosun onunda Bayvekil Pa. mm hurûzunda atış terribatî tecrübe edilecek

Türk vapurları

Yunan gemilerinden daha fazla mı resim veriyorlar?

Turk Hükûmeti

Yunanlılar

Ateşe navalizine manevreleri takip ettirmeye

Atasız (Hawe): — Mehmed

Kayı, günümüze Yunan kara manevrensiz ve sadece savaş vasfındaki takip edilmeyecek. Türk savunma situaciónunun verimlî

Tûxuni

Tûxuni

169
Ağrı Dağı'nda Tenkil Bitti

İr mukayese

Fethi Bey, gazetecilerin tevkifini protesto ediıyor

İr mukayese

Lider, "Anadolu gazetesi ihlal ediyor. Cumhuriyet hakûmârlarında adalata bitarafane tecelli ettilirizmesi Beklemede hakûmaz, diyor

Yeni şark

İmparatorluğu

Enver Paşa ile Barbaros Ali'nin sözleşmesi oluşan bazıAZE ve Rumeli'deki ortak inançınının altında duran Osmanlı İmparatorluğu'nun, Avrupa'ya saldırığa karşı savaşma ihtiyacı duydugu, bu savaşa savaşma ihtiyacı duydugu, bu savaşa savaşma ihtiyacı duydugu, bu savaşa savaşma ihtiyacı duydugu, bu savaşa savaşma necesita duydugu, bu savaşa savaşma neces
Mıçadele aralesi
Halk farklı grubu cumartesi toplandı

172
Parlamentarizim cıvıltı?

İran'a son sözümüz
Tavık siyaseti devam ederse ileri gideceğiz!
Notamız 4 gün evvel verilmiştir, Irak hududunda asiretler temizleniyor

İbrahim Tali B.
Umumi müftüttü, Ankara'ya geldi
İbrahim Tali B. geldi, golmes İsmet Pş. Hz. ne
Yanına girmemiş

İsmet Pş. geliyor
Başvikel dün akşam İstanbul'a hareket etti
İsmet Pş. Hz. nın bugün Yalova'da Gazlı Hz. ne

Brezilya Konsol
memleketimi
nasıl buluyor?

M. Diba'nın himaye
ve inşaat sayfası

Ne aldık, ne verdik?
1936 yılında hırcatımızı ihala
mazdar bir milyon faza!

Türk-Rus
Dostlık muhahedesi
teati edildi

Merasimnumuzda M. Ka
ruhan'a Moskova'ya
şamurumuz nutuklar sonraları

173
Figure 16  

Source: http://www.saradistribution.com/agri-revolution.htm
Figure 16 b

Source: http://www.saradistribution.com/agri-revolution.htm
Figure 16 e

Source: http://www.saradistribution.com/agri-revolution.htm
KURDISH HORSEMEN HELD ON MT. ARARAT

Band From Persia, Accused of Plotting Uprising, Surrounded by Turkish Troops.

By the Associated Press

ISTANBUL, Turkey, June 30.—Delayed dispatches from Van and Bayesit state that a band of 100 Kurdish horsemen from Persia still are intrenched on Mount Ararat hemmed in by Turkish troops.

The band crossed the frontier from Persia into Turkey on June 20, joining the Kurdish Haydaranli Tribe, to which they are related, and plotted an uprising near Zilan against the Turkish government.

Turkish soldiers and bombing airplanes have driven back into Persia other bands that made incursions into the region of Agri and Hanik. The government hopes to exterminate entirely the band intrenched on Mount Ararat.

Searching for Drowned Flyer.

NEW BEDFORD, Mass., June 30. (AP).—Search was conducted in Buzzards Bay today for the body of Omer Dumas, 23, a student flyer, who was drowned when his plane went into a spin and dived into the water.

Source: http://www.saradistribution.com/agri-revolution.htm
TURKS MOVE ON KURD STRONGHOLD

By the Associated Press.

ISTANBUL, Turkey, July 16.—Victorious in the Zeylan Valley, where 3,000 Kurds were slain and buried, the Turkish army today moved forward toward Mount Ararat, hoping to exterminate the remainder of the rebellious tribesmen.

These remnants of the forces which crossed the Turkish frontier from Persia several weeks ago were said to be entrenched on the sides of the famous mountain. The Turks intend to punish not only them, but those villages at the foot of the mountain which aided and abetted their movement. Five other villages also in the Provinces of Bayezit and Van will be wiped out and not a trace left.

Turkish officials admit the rebellion was more serious than the revolt by Sheik Said in 1925 and that Turkish officers who deserted the army are leading the Kurds. The Turkish Red Crescent, similar to the occidental Red Cross, is rushing aid to 10,000 women and children whose men were slain and homes pillaged in the Kurd's invasion.

Source: http://www.saradistribution.com/agri-revolution.htm
Kurds Bombed by Turks

ISTANBUL, Turkey, July 17.—Turkish troops have begun additional repressive measures against a new concentration of Kurdish insurgents at the foot of the Agridac and Ararat mountains, advices received here said today. Turkish planes flew over the concentration Wednesday and bombed it.

Source: http://www.saradistribution.com/agri-revolution.htm
TURKS ENTRENCH AGAINST REBELS

Strong Offensive Likely in Attack On Kurds

Istanbul, Turkey, July 26 (AP)—With heavy reinforcements of troops and occupation of strategic points at the base of Mt. Ararat, the Turks were placed today for a strong offensive with both infantry and cavalry against Kurds entrenched in mountain strongholds who have survived daily airplane bombardments.

During the last two weeks the Turks have completed the devastation of a wide area south and west of Ararat, destroying hundreds of villages whose inhabitants aided the rebels. Thus the Ottomans now have cut off their supplies the remaining forces of the incursion on the mountain.

Kurdish horsemen numbering about 500 rode out from Mossoul and yesterday attacked Horosan, in the province of Hakkari, hoping to draw the Turkish troops southward from Ararat. Turkish frontier forces repulsed the invasion.

An official bulletin today stated that the eastern provinces were quiet with the sole exception of Ararat which it was believed would be cleaned up today.

The Turkish press has switched from its accusations against Persia toward Iraq, now claiming that the latter supplied the rebels with their munitions.

Source: http://www.saradistribution.com/agri-revolution.htm
TO PERSIA ON KURDS

Rebellious Tribemen, Surrounded on Mount Ararat, Attempt to Escape Cold.

By the Associated Press.

ISTANBUL, August 22.—Efforts to settle recent tension between Turkey and Persia over the incursions of rebellious Kurds along the border are now in progress, and it is hoped the problem will be solved amicably by diplomatic means.

An important meeting was held yesterday, under the chairmanship of President Mustapha Kemal, to study the recent reply of the Persian government refusing to co-operate by military activities against the Kurds in Persian territory. The Turkish reply, the terms of which are not yet known, will be transmitted shortly to Teheran.

Because of cold and snow the rebellious Kurds surrounded on Mount Ararat have come down about 500 yards and are continuing efforts to slip through the besieging troops. The Persians, meanwhile, are reinforcing contingents in the neighborhood of Mount Ararat to deal with Kurdish tribes which have been trying to bring aid to their surrounded tribesmen.

Persian quarters today denied reports that a revolt had broken out against Persia, declaring that Persian military movements were simply precautionary measures against nomadic tribes.

Source: http://www.saradistribution.com/agri-revolution.htm
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Şifre yazarı</th>
<th>Dahiliye V.</th>
<th>Geldiği tarih</th>
<th>Açamba imzası</th>
<th>8 929</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Şifrenin tarihi</td>
<td>31 7 929</td>
<td>Açamba imzası</td>
<td>8 929</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Şifrenin numarası</td>
<td>31 7 929</td>
<td>Açamba imzası</td>
<td>8 929</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Pensil Beyoğl Refa RZ.**


*Belirtti Vekil Beyefendi tarafından alınmuş ve içap edene bu yolda cümle verilmiştir.*

2 - 24- 7- 29 günü Rasankale hırsız dahilinde ve İsänlı küçük iini te-

*Yazda Erzurum mifresenin yedi büyük maat manademeni kabul eden ağılı ile maktul ve on kadar mecrum varını kurbir hayvan ıstırdat ve ıki ıllah mı olde adilichtır. Hişeremendan bir şifin ve bir hasif pesel-

*Ahıldan bir kişi Edilmistir. Sıçık Firmanda Hıkan istikmetle-

*ede présan bir kalde küm ağılı ile Rasankan mantakasinde tekrar-

*temas hasil olmuş ise de bu bu manademe holında hıtem malımat savcut

*oluştuğunu aramemiz edenim.*

Dahiliye Müstufa

A. Bilmi

*Telefon : 030.60  Dış ıı: 111.7521"
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Şifreli yazı numarası</th>
<th>Dedikodu V.</th>
<th>Geldiği tarih</th>
<th>Açınma inzafı</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Askeri</td>
<td>31 / 7 / 1929</td>
<td>8 / 3 / 1929</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

İstanbul İl Satın Alma Haaretleri

1 - Kurmayda şefesi hakkında Baysal vîlâyetinden gizli alınan telgrafının İkinci Nüfus Jövende arzułuzununlandığı.

2 - 31 / 7 / 1929 ve 3927 te adjustable. Bunun açığını kadar şef Baysal vîlâyete için bir sından şef Nüfus Jövende arzułuzununlandığı.

İzleyiciliğinde,тренçet içinde ablaka surveileساسda devam ettiği başka bir nüfus Jövende arzułuzununlandığı.

Dedikodu Vekili: H. H. Metin Yüksel

Source: Metin Yüksel
Figure 20

T.C. Resmî Gazete
Tesis tarihi: 7 Teşrinievel 1336

Idare ve gazı işleri için
Bakşekâlet Müdowevenient Mâddelârûne
mürçeant olanur

29 TEMMUZ 1931
ÇARŞAMBA
SAYI: 1859

KANUNLAR

İşyan mutaaktasında işlenen efülin suç
sayılmanyayınına dair kanun

Kanun Nı: 1850  Kabul tarihi: 20/7/1931

Madde 1 — Ereşim, Zilân, Ağrîdağ havasındakı vuku bulan
işyan, bu müteaksip birinci unsur müfettişli şaratası mutahasa
ve Ertûncunun Pûmûr karasî dahîline yapılan takip ve teşdid
hareketleri mânaesbênlerile 20 haziran 1930 dan 1 kemmevel
1930 tarihinde kadar askerî kuvvetleri ve Devlet memurları ve
bunlarla birlikte hareket eden beçkî, korucu, mûlsî ve ahallî
tarafından işyanın ve bu işyanla alakâdan vak'âların teknil
emrinde gerek mûsaikînî ve gerek müştirînên işlenmiş efül
ve hareketli suç sayılmasız.

Madde 2 — Bu kanun neşrî tarihinden mutesberdir.

Madde 3 — Bu kanunun içrasına Adliye ve Dailliye Vekûlêri
memurdur. 26/7/1931

Vilâyêt İdaresi Kanununun bazı maddelereini
muuddîlî kanun

Kanun Nı: 1851  Kabül tarihi: 20/7/1931

Madde 1 — 1426 numaralî Vilâyêt İdaresi Kanununun 5
inci maddesi aşağıdaki şekilde reddetmiştir:

Vilâyêt idare şube reisleri; defterdar, mektupçu, maarif
müdürü, nafta başmûhendisî veya mühendisî, hukuk işleri, sah-
hat, ticaret, sanayi ve mesali, orman, maacîn, baytar, evkat,
tasp, nûfûs, ziraât, iskân, posta, telgraf ve telefon, rûsumat
başmüdürü ve müdürler ile polis müdürî veya bunun vaazı
fesînîî ilê etmek için yerine kaim olanından ve jandarma kuman-
šanânından ihereîî.

Madde 2 — Mezkûr kanunun 15 inci maddesi aşağıdaki
sekilde reddetilmişdir.

Vâli, 5 inci maddeye zikrolunan Vilâyêt İdaresi Şube Reis-
eri ve onların maiyetleri ile 6 inci maddeye zikrolunan Kaza

Idare Şube Reisleri ile maiyetleri ile Kaymakamlar hakkında
ihbar, tevîli cezasalarını resen tatbîk edebîlir ve tahtî mould
ahvalde takdarname verebilir.

Içbu teçhiyê ve takdirlerden Şube İdaresi Reislerîna nasîb
ve tayîni vekâletîle aît olan memurlar hakkında dair
Vâlî tarihinden aît olduğu vekâletlerde derhal mâlîmet verîlir.

Madde 3 — Mezkûr kanunun 17 inci maddesî aşağıdaki
sekilde reddetilmistir:

Valiler Vilâyette Devletin ve her vekâletin mûmêmîsî ve
vekâletlerin idari ve şiyasi icra vaastasî olup vilâyetin unsûr
idaresinden men'ûslûrler ve bu itibarla vilâyette adîî ve askerî
çairler barîcîde bûcîemîle umurda nezaret, murakabeh ve telîf
hakka haiz en büyük âmîddirler. Valilerin mûmüdemumun ile
mûsesbeetî 1426 numaralî vilâyêt idaresi kanununun 38 inci
maddesine tâhidî.

Valiler her vekîle karşî ayni ayni men'ûslûr. Vekiller
cendi vekâletlerine aît işler için resen vallile emir ve talimat
verîlir ve ikaîne reddet beyan ve ikaîn ezaçun resen tatbîk
ederler.

Takdirlerde veya ihat cezasından derhal Basvekte mâlîmet
verîlir. Bundan masda he vekî valî hakkunda ida Vekilleri
Hâyëtine tahtî ve teçhiyê teksîtîne bolunmûlî. Valiller îzer
Vekilleri Hâyeti karârîî ile zamaan vekâlet emrine ahamîde-
çekleri gibi teksîte de sevkolumnûbûlîrlî.

Madde 4 — Mezkûr kanunun 19 uncu maddesi aşağıdaki
sekilde reddetilmistir.

Vekillerin rûsûsyû men'mûrin ile ve menûruitleri dairleri
bi kaç vilâyetten mûrekkebî di恪 teksîtî memurlar ile resen
muhabebelerî içarî bir bûcîmî ihtiva etmîyen yalnız teknik
ve hésabeta aît basasîna mûnasîhî.

Şu kadar ki bu memurlar valillerin talep edecelerî her
türli mâlîmeti teknik ve hésaba aît de ola vermekse mesevî-

Madde 5 — Mezkûr kanunun 35 inci maddesi aşağıdaki
sekilde reddetilmistir.
BIBLIOGRAPHY

Alakom, Rohat, Xoybun Örgütü ve Ağrı Ayaklanması, Avesta, Istanbul, 2011

Alakom, Rohat, Di Folklor Kurdi de Serdestiyekte Jinan, Weşanxaneya Avesta, Istanbul, 2009

Alan, Remezan, “Kürt Halk Şarkıları İçin Küçük Bir Poetika”, Kovara War, Number 2, 1997

Alan, Remezan; Bendname, Weşanên Awesta, Istanbul, 2009

Allison, Christine, Kurdish Culture and Identity, edited by Philip Kreyenbroek, &Christine Allison, Bloomsbury Academic, 1996


Aras, Ahmed, Kilama Kurdî û Denbêjiya Serhedê, Kovara Bir, Hejmar 7


Assmann, Jan, the opening event of the IEA Conference “Spaces of Remembrance”, São Paulo, 15th May 2013

Aybars, Ergun, Yakın Tarihimizde Anadolu Ayaklanmaları, Türk Dünyası Araştırmaları Vakfı, İstanbul, 1988


Bois, Thomas, La Vie Sociale Des Kurdes, Imprimerie Catholique, Beyrouth, 1962


Cibo, Nezir, Haverkili Haco Ağa, Kürt Tarihi Dergisi, Number: 37

Cindî, Hecîyê & Evdal, Emînê, Folklora Kurmancan, Avesta Yayınevi, İstanbul, 2008

Çay, Abdulhaluk, Her Yöntüyle Kürt Dosyası, Turan Kültür Vakfı, İstanbul, 1996

Çelik, Duygu, Dengbêjlik Geleneği ve Kürt Tiyatrosuna Etkisi, PhD Dissertation (In Turkish), İstanbul University, Social Sciences Institute, 2017


Değerli-Sarkoyuncu, Esra; Ağrı İсыanlarında Yabancı Parmakı 1926-1930, Dumlupınar Üniversitesi, Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi, Sayı 22, Aralık, 2008

Demirer, Hüseyin; Ha Wer Delall Emînê Perîxanê’ın Hayatı, Avesta yay., İstanbul, 2008


Finnegan, Ruth, Literacy and Orality, Studies in the Technology of Communication, Basil Blackwell Ltd, 1988


Genelkurmay Belgelerinde Kürt İsyamları-I; Kaynak Yayınları, 2012, İstanbul


Graff, Harvey J., The Legacies of Literacy: Continuities and Contradictions in Western Culture and Society, Indiana University Press, Bloomington and Indianapolis, 1987


Hamelink & Barış, *Kürt Halk Özanları Dengbêjlerin Gözünden Sınırlar ve Devlet*, İsmail Beşikçi Vakfı, Kürt Çalışmaları/ Bahar Akademisi-1

Hough, Christina, “*Obscured Hybridity: The Kurdishness of Turkish Folk Music*”, *Pacific Review of Ethnomusicology*, Vol. 15 (Fall 2010)


Hun, Mücahit Özden, *İğdir ve Ağrı Dağı İyami*, Alter Yay., Ankara, 2019


Kivilemlî, Hitkem, *İhtiyat Kuvvet: Milliyet (Şark)*, Yol Yay., İstanbul, 1979


Olson, Robert, Kurdish Nationalism and Sheikhs’ Rebellion, University of Texas Press, Austin, 1989

Olick, Jeffrey K. and Joyce Robbins; Social Memory Studies From Collective Memory to the Historical Sociology of Mnemonic Practices, Annual Review of Sociology, Number: 24 (1), 1998


Öcalan, Abdullah, Bir Halkı Savunmak, Amara Yay., Istanbul, 2004


Propp, Vladimir, Theory and History of Folklore, University of Minnesota Press, 1984


Schäfers, Marlene, From shameful to public voice: Women dengbêjs, the work of pain, and Kurdish history, Kürt Tarihi, Vol. 26, September 2016


Sträuli, Barbara, “Our Steppe is Vast...”, *Kurdish epics and tribal stories from Urfa*, 1906, Collected by Oskar Mann, Edited. Translated and introduced by Barbara Sträuli, Harrassowitz Verlag, Wiesbaden, 2021


Toktamış, Kumru, *Bazı Kadınlar için Savaş Hiç bitmez / Yaşar Hanımın Anıları*: Kürt Tarihi Dergisi, Number: 37


**Internet Sources:**

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=79E7FH3Yjd8

http://archives.crem-cnrs.fr/archives/collections/CNRSMH_I_2006_008/

wwwiranicaonline.org/articles/folk-poetry


https://ourworldindata.org/literacy


https://www.arsivakurd.org

https://www.google.com/maps/@39.4209956,43.0281869,7.22z

https://www.google.com/maps/@39.6966091,44.3730556,22237m/data=!3m1!1e3

http://archives.crem-cnrs.fr/archives/collections/CNRSMH_I_2006_008/


http://www.midafternoonmap.com/2013/10/rebellious-tribes-of-eastern-anatolia.html

http://www.mku.edu.tr/files/200-0bb55d9e-e0bb-413b-a4a9-d21120852f52.pdf

**Media Sources:**

Agos Gazetesi, Aydımkaya, Fırat, Bir Başka Açidan Kürtlerin Ermeni Soykırımındaki Rolü, 27th March 2015

Cumhuriyet Gazetesi Arşivi, May-September 1930.

Dunya TV, Interview with Ahmed Aras, Rû Bi Rû, by Nevzat Keskin, 6th December 2013.

IMC TV, Dîrok, Parts: 37, 38, (2011) and the Special Program with Naci Kutlay (2012).

T.C. Resmi Gazete, Sayı: 1859, 29th July 1931.


Yeni Yaşam Gazetesi, Ulugana, Sedat, bir-kurt-pasanin-anilari/ 3th March 2022.